



Class PC 5066
Book V 5









PORTUGUESE

GRAMMAR:

WITH

THE PORTUGUESE WORDS PROPERLY ACCENTED

ACCORDING TO THE LATEST AND BEST AUTHORITIES.

By ANTHONY VIEYRA.

THE TENTH EDITION,
REVISED AND IMPROVED.

"Necesse est enim inter quos mercaturæ et contractuum sint, inter eos quoque sermonis esse commercia."—UBERTUS FOLIETA.



PRINTED FOR J. COLLINGWOOD, IN THE STRAND.

PC 50 6 6 . V5

THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

As the usefulness of the Portuguese Language is so well known to all English merchants who carry on a general trade with the different Parts of the known world, it will be needless to use any arguments here to prove it; and I shall refer what I have to say on the copiousness and energy of this language, to the Preface to my English and Portuguese Dictionary.*

The reader will find in the FIRST PART of this Grammar, what is material as a foundation of the whole.

At the end of the SECOND PART is a full explanation of the Particles, on which I have bestowed more time and labour, because this subject has been hitherto much neglected, although the principal ornament and elegance not only of the Portuguese, but of every other language, chiefly consist in the proper arrangement and judicious interspersion of the words.

^{*} A New Edition of which is now in the Press.—JAN. 1827.

In the THIRD PART is a larger collection than hitherto published of the terms of Trade, War, Navigation, &c. which the present intercourse between the nations renders particularly useful.

Having found a great difficulty in procuring Portuguese books in this Country, I have been commonly obliged to furnish with part of my private collection those Gentlemen whom I have had the honour of assisting in the study of this language, during my residence here; therefore, in the FOURTH PART I have given some passages selected from the best Portuguese Authors, and which will, at the same time, facilitate the reading of their most eminent writers.

ADVERTISEMENT

TO

THE NINTH EDITION.

THIS new Edition of Mr. Vieyra's Grammar has been not only accurately marked with the proper accents, to facilitate the Pronunciation and the Intelligence of the Language, but even materially altered in the body of the Work. The accentuation is a matter of so much consequence in the Portuguese Language, that one accent used in the room of another often changes entirely the signification of the word; as for instance in the words Avó and Avô; the former, when marked with an acute, meaning grand-mother, the latter with a circumflex, meaning grandfather. This interesting part, in which all the former Editions have been so deficient (using only the acute) has been scrupulously corrected in the present one. In that part which treats of the Pronunciation, some very necessary corrections have been introduced. The pronunciation of the ch, wrongly explained in the other Editions, is in this brought to its real sound.

New passages from the best Modern Writers have been substituted for some of the Ancient ones, to enable the learners to form a proper idea of the variations and progress of the Language, down to the present time. A new Vocabulary of the Military Words of Command and a fresh Translation of the Commercial Letters have also been inserted in this Edition.*

Such are the principal alterations made in this Work, which, it is hoped, will meet with the approbation of the public.

London, May 1813.

^{*} Various Improvements have been made in the present Edition, (Jan. 1827) particularly in a general correction of the Phraseology of the English part of the Grammar.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

	r	age
OF the Portuguese Alphabet, and the manner of pronouncine each separate Letter	ng -	1
Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters	28	•
combined in Syllables	-	3
Of the Articles	-	8
Of the Nouns	-	11
Of the Pronouns	-	25
Of Verbs	-	44
Of the Participles	-	113
Of the Adverbs	-	114
Of the Prepositions	-	117
Of the Conjunctions	-	118
Interjective Particles	-	120
Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language	=	121
PART II.		
\		
Of the Division of Syntax	-	122
Of the Syntax of Articles	_	126
Of the Syntax of Nouns, and first, of the Substantives	-	131
Of the Syntax of Adjectives	-	132
Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives	_	135
Of the Syntax of Pronouns		136
Of the Syntax of Verbs	_	139
Of the Syntax of Participles and Gerunds	-	152
Of Prepositions	-	154

	0	۰	C
37	٦	п	5
v	A	J.	B

Of the Portuguese Orthography

Of the Quantity of Syllables, and their Sound

Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin

PART III.	
* *****	
The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language	- 218
A Vocabulary of Words most used in Discourse	- 249
Of the Portuguese Coin	- 306
A Collection of Portuguese Proverbs	- 307
Familiar Dialogues	316
Letters on Mercantile Affairs, &c.	- 331

PART IV.

Several useful and entertaining	Passages,	collected	from	the	
best Portuguese Writers	-	H H	-	-	356

191

209

215

A NEW

PORTUGUESE

GRAMMAR.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

OF THE PORTUGUESE ALPHABET, AND THE MANNER OF PRONOUNCING EACH SEPARATE LETTER.

THE Portuguese alphabet contains twenty-four letters, viz.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, X, Y, Z.

The A is expressed by a sound like that of a in the English words at, rat, fat, &c.

B is expressed by a sound like that of the be, in the first syllable of the English word Betty.

C is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word celebrated.

D is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word declare.

E is expressed by a sound like that which we give to the English a when we pronounce the word care.

F is expressed by the same sound as in English.

G is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word generation.

H is expressed by a sound like that of the English word *inchast*, if you cut off the two last letters st. and keep the accent on the second a.

I is expressed by the sound of ee.

J is called *consoante*, it is expressed by the sound of ee, and has the same power as the g before e or i.

L, as in English.

M, as in English.

N, as in English.

O has nearly the same sound as in the English word store.

P is expressed by a sound like that of pe in the English word penny.

Q is expressed by a sound like that of the English k.

R is expressed by a sound like that of the English. participle erred, if you cut off the last letter d.

S, as in English.

T is expressed by a sound like that of that in the English word Thames.

U is expressed by a sound like that of oo in the English word poop.

V is expressed by a sound like that of oo; they call it also oo consoante, i. e. the v consonant.

X is expressed by a sound like that of our pronoun personal she, if you add an s to it, or as shees.

Y is expressed by a sound like that of an i in the English word visible, and is called ypsilon.

Z is expressed by the sound of our English zed, leaving out the d, or zea.

Of the manner of Pronouncing the Portuguese Letters as combined in Syllables; and first

OF THE VOWELS.

A,

In Portuguese, is commonly pronounced like a in the following English words adapted, castle, &c. It is sometimes pronounced with less strength, and closely, as in ambos, where the a is pronounced like a in the English word ambition.

E.

The letter e has two different sounds; the one open like ai in daily: the other close, like that in the English word mellow. Examples of the former, fe, faith, pé, foot, &c. Examples of the latter, réde, a net, parêde, a wall, &c. In this consists a great part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation, which, however, cannot be learned but by long use, notwithstanding all the rules that can be given.

Ī

Is pronounced like ee in the English word steel, aço; or like i in the English words still, aında; visible, visıvel.

O.

This vowel has two sounds; one open, as in the word do', pity, where the o is pronounced like our o in the word store; the other close, as in the Portuguese article do, of, and the word redondo, round, where the o is pronounced like our u in turret or stumble. It is likewise in the different pronunciation of this vowel that the greatest part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation consists; but it can be learned only by long use.

U.

The vowel u is pronounced like oo in English.

Y

Has the same sound as the Portuguese vowel i.

OF CONSONANTS.

B

Keeps always the same sound as in English.

C

Before a, o, u, and the consonants l, r, is properly pronounced as k; but before e and i it takes the hissing sound of s: it takes also the sound of s before

u, o, u, when there is a dash under it thus c.

I could wish the learned in Portugal would follow the resolution of the Royal Academy of Madrid, by expunging such dash, and placing the s in its stead, since they have in both languages the same hissing sound, which frequently occasions great confusion in the proper use of them.

C before h is pronounced like sh in the English

words shine, shape, &c.

Double c is sounded only before e and i, the first with the sound of k, and the other with the hissing sound of s; as in accidente, accident, pronounce aksidente.

D

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

F

Is pronounced always as in English.

G

Before the vowels a, o, u, and before consonants, is pronounced as in English: example, $g \acute{o} s t o$, taste; $g a i \acute{o} l u$, cage; g r i t o, a cry.

G. before e and i denotes the sound of j consonant.

Gua sounds almost like the English wa: example, guárda, pronounce gwarda.

Gue, gui, are pronounced as gue in the word guest, and gui in the word gift; but in the verbs arguir and redarguir, it is pronounced as if it were written argueer, &c.

H.

The letter h is never aspirated nor pronounced at the beginning of words, as $h \acute{o} r a$, an hour; homem, a man: according to the modern orthography, all those words are written without an h.

H, when preceded by a c, makes a sound with it like our sh. See the letter C, and also the letters

L and N.

J

Is pronounced like our j consonant.

K.

The Portuguese have no k.

L

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English. Lh, is pronounced like g before an l in the Italian words figlio, foglio, &c.

M

Is pronounced as in English, when placed before a vowel with which it forms a syllable; but, when it is at the end of words, and preceded by the letter e, it forms in Portuguese a nasal sound like that of the French words vin, wine; pain, bread; except sôem, tôem, from the verbs soár, toár, and some others.

M at the end of words preceded by an a, o, or i, has a nasal obtuse sound, which can only be earned from the mouth of a mas r.

N

Before a vowel with which it forms a syllable, is pronounced as in English; otherwise, it only gives a nasal sound to the vowel that precedes it.

N before h has the same sound as gn in Italian,

or in the French words Espagne, Allemagne.

P

And ph are pronounced as in English.

Q

Is pronounced like k: example, quéro I am wil

ling, pronounce kero.

The vowel u after q in the word qual, which must be uttered so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear, is pronounced as in the English word quantity, in order to distinguish it from the substantive cal, lime.

R

And double r are pronounced as in English.

S

And ss are pronounced as in English.

S between two vowels is pronounced like a z; particularly in the words ending in oso, and esa, as amorôso, cuidadôso, mêsa, defêsa, &.

T

Is pronounced as in English.

V

Is pronounced as in English.

X

Is pronounced as sh in English; except in the word axioma, in which, according to $Feyj\delta$, the x is to be pronounced like c.

X after the vowel e is pronounced like es, in the words, extençam, extenuádo, expulso, excellênte, and some other words.

X between two vowels is pronounced like gz in the words exactaménte, exornár; except Alexândre, Paixám, Puxo, báxo, and some other words, that may be learned by use. Care must be taken to pronounce the g so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear.

Z

Is pronounced as in English, but at the end of words it is pronounced like s, as $rap\acute{a}z$, boy; Francez, French; $perd\acute{i}z$, partridge; voz, voice; luz,

light, &c.

The little dash which the Portuguese call til, is set by them over some letters instead of m; as $b\tilde{e}$ instead of bem; $conv\tilde{e}$ instead of $conv\acute{e}m$; $h\tilde{u}a$ instead of huma; and as it is then to be considered as an m, see what we have said about the pronunciation of that letter.

The til, is also placed over the vowels, ao, aa, in the end of words, thus $a\tilde{o}$ $a\tilde{a}$. See what we have said above of m at the end of words preceded by an a.

It may be here observed that the curved mark, is the most perfect, though it is often found necessary, in English types, to substitute the plain instead of the curved.

OF DIPHTHONGS.

The meeting of two vowels in one syllable constitute what is called a Diphthong. The following are the Diphthongs of the Portuguese language.

Aa, as in $maç\tilde{aa}$, an apple.

Ae, as in caes, dogs.

Ay, as in $p\acute{a}y$, father.

Ai, as in $m\acute{a}is$, more. Ao, as in $p\acute{a}o$, wood.

Au, as in cáusa, a cause.

Eo, as in céo, heaven.

Ey, as in rey, king.

Ei, as in améi, I loved.

Eu, as eu, I.

Io, as vio, he saw.

Oe, as in poem, they put; compoem, they compose; meloes, melons, &c.

Oy, as in $b\delta y$, an $ox : f\delta y$, he was.

Ou, as dôu, I give; sou, I am.

Ue, as azúes, blue:

The two vowels in the following words must be plainly and distinctly pronounced:

Ai, as in paiz, a country, pronounce pa-iz.

Ea, as in lampréa, a lamprey, pronounce lampré-a. Ia, as cleméncia, clemency, pronounce cleménci-a.

Io, as in navío, a ship, pronounce naví-o. Iu, as viúva, a widow, pronounce vi-úva.

Oa, as Lisbôa, Lisbon, próa, a prow, pronounce Lisbô-a, &c.

Oe, as tôem, sôem, from the verbs, toár and soár, pronounce tô-em, &c.

Oi, as roim, bad, pronounce ro-im.

Oo, as cooperaçâm, co-operation, pronounce, co-operação.

Ui, as ruina, ruin, pronounce ru-ina.

CHAP. II.

OF THE ARTICLES.

THOSE particles called Articles, are properly prepositions, commonly put before nouns, to shew their gender, number, and case.

These articles are definite or indefinite.

Of the Definite Article.

The definite article marks the gender, number, and case, of the nouns which it precedes.

The English tongue has but one definitive article, namely the, which serves for both numbers.

The Portuguese has two, viz. o for the masculine

and a for the feminine.

The definite article has five cases, the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative; because the vocative in the nouns is designed and preceded merely by the particle o.

The Declension of the Masculine Article o.

Singular.

Nominative, o, the Genitive, do, of the Dative, ao, or o, to the Accusative, ao, or o, the Ablative, do, from or by the

Plural.

Nominative, os, the Genitive, dos, of the Dative, aos, or os, to the Accusative, aos, or os, the Ablative, dos, from or by the

The Declension of the Feminine Article a.

Singular.

Nominative, a, the Genitive, da, of the Dative, \acute{a} to the Accusative, a, the Ablative, da, from the

Plural.

Nominative, as, the Genitive, das, of the Dative, ás, to the Accusative, as, the Ablative, das, from or by the

Observe, that the Portuguese have an article for each gender, both in the singular and the plural.

Of the Indefinite Article.

The indefinite article may be put before the masculine as well as the feminine gender, before the plural as well as the singular number.

The indefinite article has but four cases, the

genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative.

De may be put before a noun masculine as well as feminine, as húma corba de rêy, a king's crown; the word rêy is masculine; hum chapéo de pálha, a hat of straw; the word pálha is of the feminine gender.

The indefinite article de is also put before the plural as well as the singular number; example,

húma corba de flores, a crown of flowers; hum práto de arrôz, a plate of rice.

Declension of the Indefinite Article.

Genitive, de, of Dative, á, to,

Accusative, a Ablative, de from

The accusative of this article is not expressed in English: example, Eu conhecí a sêu páy, I knew his father, éu conhecí a súa mãy, I knew his mother.

The indefinite article may also be put before infinitives, and then it signifies to; as he têmpo de fallar, de dormir, de lêr, &c. it is time to speak, to sleep, to read, &c. éu vôu a vêr, a fallar, I am going to see, to speak.

N. B. Whenever we meet with of and to in English, followed by the, remember they are the indefinite articles, and then we must use the indefinite

article de, or a, in Portuguese.

When the verb is in the infinitive mood, and serves as nominative to the following verb, put the article o before it; as o comér e o dormir são as côusas máis necessárias nésta vída, eating and sleep-

ing are the greatest necessaries of life.

When the preposition in is followed by the article the, or by a pronoun possessive, as in the, in my, in thy, in his, we must render it in Portuguese by em o or no, em, os, or nos for the masculine; and by em a or na, em as or nas, for the feminine: example, in the garden, em o jardím, or no jardím; in the street, em a rúa or na rúa; in thy book, em o têu or no têu lívro; in his bed, em a súa, or na súa câma, &c.

When after the preposition with, which in Portuguese is expressed by com, we find the article the, or a pronoun possessive, as with the, with my, &c. we may say, com o, or co, com a or coa, com os or cos com as or coas: example, with the prince, com o or co principe; with the sword, com a or coa espáda; with the eyes, com os or cos olhos; with my books,

com os or cos méus lívros, &c.

When the preposition with is followed by a pronoun possessive, and this by a noun of quality or kindred, as with your majesty, with your highness, with your excellency, with his brother, &c. with must then be rendered by the Portuguese word com, as com vóssa, majeståde com vóssa altéza, com séu irmão, without using the article.

Observe, that sometimes the dative and accusative of the indefinite article are not expressed in English, particularly before pronouns—personal and proper names; example, convém a nós, it behoves us; António matôu a Pêdro, Anthony killed Peter.

CHAP. III.

OF THE NOUNS.

THE Portuguese nouns have various terminations, as will appear hereafter.

They have but two genders, the masculine and

feminine.

The Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases, like the Latin, the article only distinguishes the case.

Of Nouns ending in a; and of their Declension.

Singu	lar.	Plural.	
Nom. a rainha,	the ¬	Nom. as rainhas, the	
Gen. da rainha,	of the	Gen. das rainhas, of the	
Dat. á raínha,	to the	TO 1 1 -	
Acc. a raínha,	to the	Dat. ás rainhas, to the Acc. as rainhas, the Voc. ó rainhas.	
Voc. ó rainha,	o(#	Voc. 6 rainhas, O	
Abl. da ou pêlla	rainha,	Abl.das ou pellas rainhas	
from or by the		from or by the	

We have already observed that the Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases; therefore there is no occasion to display more examples of their declensions, as it is only necessary to change the article according to their gender.

Of the Gender of Nouns ending in a.

Nouns ending in a are generally of the feminine gender; as rósa, a rose; janélla, a window, &c. Except día, a day, planéta a planet; and other nouns ending in a, belonging to a man; as marióla, a porter; jesuíta, a jesuit: those derived from the Greek are likewise masculine; as dógma, epigrâmma, clíma; except scientific names, as mathemática, theología, &c.

Except also from this general rule some nouns that have the accent upon the last syllable; as *alva-rá*, a charter, or a prince's letters patent; *Pará*, one of the captainships of the Portuguese America, &c.

Observe, that the plural of nouns ending in a is formed by adding the letter s to the singular; as likewise the plural of all nouns that terminate in vowels.

Observe also, that nouns ending in $\tilde{a}a$ are of the feminine gender, and form their plural as those ending in a.

Of the Gender of Nouns ending in e.

Nouns ending in e are generally of the masculine gender; as dente, a tooth; válle, a valley; véntre the womb, &c.

The exceptions are $f\acute{e}$, faith; $f\acute{o}nte$, a fountain; $ch\acute{a}ve$, a key; $t\acute{o}rre$, a tower; $\acute{a}ve$, a fowl; $c\acute{a}rne$, flesh or meat; $g\acute{e}nte$, people; $m\acute{o}rte$, death; $n\acute{e}ve$ snow; $n\acute{o}ite$, night; $p\acute{o}nte$, a bridge; $p\acute{e}ste$, plague; $p\acute{a}rte$, part; $serp\acute{e}nte$, a serpent; $l\acute{e}bre$ a hare.

Except also all names of virtues, vices, faculties, and those expressive of the passions of the mind; as virtúde, virtue; santidáde, holiness; bondáde, goodness; vaidáde, vanity; ociosidáde, idleness, &c.

Thirdly, idáde, age; velhíce, old age; rusticidáde, rusticity; capacidáde, capacity; felicidáde, happiness; sórte, fortune; árte, art; árvore, a tree; fertilidáde, fertility; séde, thirst; sébe, a hedge; cóuve, cabbage; herdáde, a farm or manor; chaminé, a chimney; paréde, a wall; saúde, health; réde, a net; maré, the tide; fébre, fever; galé, a gallery, &c.

Of the Gender of Nouns ending in i.

Nouns ending in i are masculine; as éxtasi, a rapture; $n\acute{e}bri$, a hawk, &c.

Of Nouns ending in o.

Nouns ending in o are of the masculine gender; as livro, a book; filho, a son; bráço, an arm; vestido, a garment; espélho, a looking glass, &c. Except náo, a ship; filhó, a fritter or pancake; eiró, an eel.

Of Nouns ending in u.

All nouns ending in u are masculine; as $per\acute{u}$, a turkey; $gr\acute{o}u$, a crane.

Of Nouns ending in y.

Nouns ending in y are of the masculine gender; as réy, king; páy, father; bóy, ox, &c. except léy, a law; mãy, a mother.

Of the other Terminations of Nouns, or of those terminating in Consonants.

1. All nouns ending in al are masculine; as sinál; a sign or token; sal, salt. Except cal, lime, which is feminine, and has no plural.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the letter l of the singular into es; as $sin\acute{a}es$ from

sinál; animáes from animal.

2. Nouns ending in ar are of the masculine gen-

der; as ar air.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es to the singular, as ares from ar.

Some nouns ending in as in the plural are feminine, and have no singular; as migas, exéquias, &c.

3. Nouns ending in az are of the masculine gender; as rapáz, a boy; except paz, peace. The plural is formed by the addition of es to the singular.

4. Nouns ending in el are masculine; as annél;

a ring; papél, paper, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *is*; annéis, from annél:

papéis, from papél.

5. Nouns ending in em are of the masculine gender; as hômem, a man; bem, benefit, &c. Except ôrdem, order; viágem, a voyage; vírgem, a virgin, &c. but salvágem, a savage, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the m of the singular into ns; as hômens from hô-

mem, &c.

6. Nouns ending in er are of the masculine gender; as podér, power; prazér, pleasure, &c. Except colhér, a spoon; mulhér, a woman.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es

to the singular, as colhéres, from colhér.

7. Nouns ending in ez are of the masculine gender; as freguéz, a parishioner or a customer; méz, month; arnéz, levéz, revéz, &c. Except surdéz, deafness; torquéz, vêz, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es to the singular, as freguézes, from freguéz; but

téz has no plural.

8. Nouns ending in il are of the masculine gen-

der; as funil, a funnel; barril, a barrel.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the l of the singular into s, as funis, from funil, &c. Except aquátil, fáçil, pensíl, &c. which change the il into eis in the plural, as fácies, from fácil.

9. Nouns ending in im are of the masculine gen-

der, as espadím, a little sword.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *espadins* from *espadim*.

10. Nouns ending in ir or yr are of the masculine gender; but mártir or mártyr, a martyr, is

common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es

to the singular.

11. All nouns ending in iz are of the masculine gender; as apprendiz, an apprentice; nariz, nose; verniz, varnish; matiz, a shadowing in painting; chafariz, chamariz, &c. Except aboiz, perdiz, raiz, codorniz, matriz, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es

to the singular, as perdizes from perdiz.

12. Nouns ending in ol are of the masculine gen-

der; as anzól, a hook; sól, the sun, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *anzóes* from *anzól*, &c.

13. Nouns ending in om are of the masculine gen-

der; as som, sound; dôm, gift, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *sons* from *som*, &c.

14. Nouns ending in or are of the masculine gender; as amór; love, temór, fear, &c. Except dór, pain; cór, colour, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es

to the singular, as amôres from amôr.

Nouns ending in os are of the masculine gender; as Deôs, God.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing

the s into zes, as Déozes, from Déos.

15. Nouns ending in oz are of the masculine gender; as albernóz, a Moorish coat; arróz, rice; algóz, hangman, &c. Except nóz, a walnut; vóz, voice; fóz the mouth of a river.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es

to the singular.

16. Nouns ending in *ul* or *um* are of the masculine gender; as *sul*, the south; *Saúl*, Saul, a proper

name of a man; atúm, tunny-fish.

The plural of those ending in *ul*, according to the learned *Bluteau*, is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *súes* from sul; *azúes*, from *azúl*, blue, &c. Except *cônsules* from *cônsul*, a consul.

The plural of those ending in um, is formed by changing the m of the singular into ns, as atúns

from atúm.

17. Nouns ending in uz are of the masculine gender; as arcabúz, an arquebuss.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding es

to the singular.

18. Nouns ending in aõ are of the feminine gender; as maõ, hand; composiçaõ, composition, oraçaõ, oration, &c. Except paõ, bread; anaõ, a dwarf; ouçaõ, a hand-worm; trovaõ, thunder; esquadraõ, a squadron; piaõ, a child's top; borraõ, a blot with Ink; papelaõ, paste-board; chaõ, the

ground, quinhaõ, a share.

There is no certain rule for the formation of the plural of the nouns ending in ao; because some change the ao, of the singular into aes, as Alemaes, from Alemao, a German; capitaes, from capitao, a captain; cães, from cao, a dog; pães, from pao, a loaf, &c. Some change the ao of the singular into ãos; as cidadãos, from cidadão, a citizen; christãos, from christao, a christian; cortezãos from cortezaő a courtier; villãos, from villaő, a villain, &c. Some change the $a\tilde{o}$ of the singular into $\tilde{o}es$; as esquadrões, from esquadraõ, a squadron; trovões, from trovao, thunder; conclusões, from conclusão, a conclusion; orações, from oração, an oration; and generally all the Portuguese nouns may be easily made English, by changing their termination ção into the English termination tion, as declinação, declension or declination, consideração, consideration, &c. and these are of the feminine gender.

19 All nouns signifying a male must be of the masculine gender; as dúque, duke; marquéz, a marquis; cónde, count; and those denoting a female are always feminine.

Two general rules may be formed from what has been said concerning the formation of the plural of

nouns, viz.

I. That all nouns ending in any of the vowels have their plural formed by adding the letter s to the singular.

II. That the plural of nouns ending in az, ez, iz,

oz, uz, is formed by adding es to the singular.

Of Augmentatives.

The Portuguese have their augmentatives formed by the increase of one or two syllables, which they add to the end of their nouns, and which serve either to augment the signification of nouns, or to declare a thing contemptible; thus, from hômem, a man, they form, hômemzarro, a great strong man; tôlo, a fool, toleiraō, a great fool, &c. and some others that may be learned by use. They have also their augmentatives for the feminine; as molherôna, a great stout woman; toleirôna, &c.

There are a great many nouns that appear, by their termination, to be augmentatives, though they are not; as, forão, a ferret; atafóna, an ass or a

horse-mill, &c.

Of Diminutives.

The diminutives lessen the signification of their

primitives.

The diminutives in the Portuguese language are always formed by changing the last vowel of the primitives into *inho*; but they denote either smallness of things, or kindness and flattery; as bichinho, a little worm, from bicho, a worm; coitadinho, from coitádo, a poor little man; bonitinho, a little pretty

C

person or thing, from bonito, pretty. Sometimes they are formed by adding zinho to the primitives; as caōzinho, a little dog, from caō, a dog, irmaōzinho,

dear little brother, from irmao, &c.

The diminutives that serve for the feminine have their termination in *inha*, or *zinha*; as *maōzinha*, a little hand, from *maō*, a hand; *cabecinha*, a little head, from *cabeça*, a head. It may be seen from the last example, that the diminutives serving for the feminine and ending in *inha*, are formed by changing the last syllable *a* of the primitive into *inha*.

Observe that many nouns appear to be diminutives without being so; as moinho, a mill; espinha,

a fish bone.

Note, the diminutives in Portuguese convey sometimes a bad meaning, and denote contempt.

Of Nouns Adjective.

All adjectives ending in o make their feminine by changing o into a; as $d\delta uta$, from $d\delta uto$, learned; but $m\delta o$, bad, makes $m\delta a$ in the feminine.

Those which end in $a\tilde{o}$ have their feminine in $\tilde{a}a$; as, $s\tilde{a}a$, from $sa\tilde{o}$, healthy; $lou_{\tilde{c}}\tilde{a}a$, from $lou_{\tilde{c}}\tilde{a}o$, brisk, gay, beautiful; $m\tilde{e}aa$, from $me\tilde{a}o$, middling, ordinary.

Those ending in e are common to both genders;

as, fórte, strong, &c.

Those which end in m make their feminine by adding an a to the masculine; as, h & m a, from h & m, one; $a \lg \& m a$, from $a \lg \& m$, some, &c. and sometimes by changing the m into a; as, comm & a, from comm & m, common; b & a, from bom, good.

Those ending in u make their feminine by adding an a to the masculine, as nua, from nu, naked;

crúa, from cru, raw.

Those ending in ez are common to both genders; as cort ez, civil, kind; cap az, capable, &c. except some which make the feminine, by adding a to the

masculine; as, Francéza, from Francéz, French;

Portuguéza, from Portuguéz, Portuguese.

Espanhól, Spanish, makes Espanhóla in the feminine: but generally those which end in l are common to both genders; as affável, affable; cruél, cruel, &c.

Of the Comparison of Adjectives.

The comparison of adjectives is the way of increasing their signification by certain degrees, which are three, viz. the positive, comparative and superlative.

The positive lays down the natural signification of the adjective; as, nóbre, noble; gránde, great.

The comparative raises it to a higher degree, by comparing it with the positive, which in Portuguese is performed by the adverbs máis, more; mênos, less; as, máis nóbre, more noble; mênos bélla, less handsome.

There are some adjectives which do not admit of máis or mênos before them; as celéste, nascído, comprádo, desterrádo, &c.

There are four Portuguese comparatives which end in or: they may also be expressed by máis, more, before their positive; as,

Mayór, greater, máis grande. Menór, less, máis pequéno. Peór, worse, máis roim. Melhór, better, máis bóm.

To which may be added superior, superior; in-

ferior, inferior; deterior; and some others.

Observe, that there can be no comparison made without the word than; and that this word is expressed in Portuguese by que. Ex. Máis cláro que o sól, clearer than the sun; máis brânco que a nêve, more white than the snow. The particle que is sometimes preceded by the word do. Ex. isto he máis do que êu lhe disse, this is more than I told him;

hé máis prudênte do que paréce, he is more wise than

it appears.

N. B. The comparatives superior, inferior, and some others, do not require que before the second term but the dative of the articles, viz. a, as, ao; aos: Examp. O outro he superior a este, the other

is superior to this.

When the Portuguese have a mind to heighten their comparisons, they make use of, muito mais, a great deal or much more; as also of, muito menos, a great deal or much less. Ex. Casar he muito mais estimado que Pompéo, Cæsar is much more esteemed than Pompey: Pompéo fci muito menos feliz que Cæsar, Pompey was much less happy than Cæsar.

Of the Superlative.

The Portuguese superlative is formed from the noun adjective, by changing the last letter into issimo for the masculine, and into issimo for the feminine: thus, from bello is formed bellissimo and bellissimo, most handsome. But sometimes the superlative is formed by adding muito, very, to the

positive; as, muito álto, very tall.

Observe that some superlatives are differently formed; as frigidissimo, from frio, cold; amicissimo, from amigo, friend; antiquissimo, from antigo, ancient: capacissimo, from capáz, capable; nobilissimo, from nóbre, noble; acérrimo, from ácre, sharp, or acerb; riquissimo, from rico, rich; fertilissimo, from fértil, fruitful; bonissimo, from bóm, good; fidelissimo, from fiél, faithful; sacratissimo, from sagrádo, sacred, &c.

The most is expressed also in Portuguese by o máis and a máis; as the most fair, or fairest, o máis béllo, a máis bélla. But there are some adjectives which do not admit of muíto, very, o máis, or a máis; as môrto, desterrado, &c.

Observe, that by changing the last letter of the superlatives into amente, superlative adverbs are

composed; as, from doutissimo, learned; doutissimaménte, most learnedly, &c. But the positive adverbs are formed by adding ménte to the feminine of the positive; as doutamente, learnedly, from douta, the feminine of douto; prudentemente, prudently, from prudente, prudent.

Of Numeral Nouns; and first, of Cardinal.

The cardinal nouns are such as express the number of things: as.

Húm one	Vinte e dous twenty-two
Dous two	Vinte e três, &c. twenty-
Três three	three &c.
Quátro four	Trinta thirty
Cinco five	Quarênta forty
Séis sixty	Cincoenta fifty
Séte seven	Sessênta sixty
Oúto or ôito eight	Setênta seventy
Nóve nine	Oitênta eighty
$D\acute{e}z$ ten	Novênta ninety
O'nze eleven	Cêm a hundred
Dôze twelve	Duzêntos two hundred
Trêze thirteen	Trezêntos three thousand
Quatôrze fourten	Mil a thousand
Quinza fifteen	Dous mil two thousand
Dezasêis sixteen	Milhao or cônto a million
Dezaséte seventeen	Húma dezêna half a score
Dezőutoeighteen	Húma duzía a dozen
Dezanóvenineteen	Húma vintêna a score
Vinte twenty	Dúas vintênas two score
Vinte e húm twenty-one	Três vintênas three score

Observe, that all the cardinals that are adjective nouns are not declined, being of the common gender, except hum húma, one; dóus dúas, two; and those composed of cénto, a hundred; as duzéntos, two hundred; quátro céntos, quátro céntas, four hundred, &c. and when the feminine húma is preceded by á, and followed by á óutra, then húma signifies first, and á óutra, secondly.

The plural, húns, húmas, is taken sometimes instead of algúns, algúmas, signifying some; as húns reys, some kings; húmas raínhas, some queens.

N. B. Cênto loses to before a noun, either masculine or feminine, and the n is changed into m; therefore you must say, cem soldádos, not cênto soldádos. It only retains to and n when it is followed by another number, as cênto e húm, &c. a hundred and one, &c. and when it is substantive.

N. B. Sometimes cênto is made a substantive : as húm cênto de castânhas, one hundred of chesnuts: likewise all the cardinal numbers, when preceded by an article, or by another noun of number, as o cinco de páos, the five of clubs; húm séte, a seven.

The cardinal number is rendered into English by the ordinal, when it expresses the day of the month, or the date of any act; as, chegou a quatro

de Máyo, he arrived the fourth day of May.

Ordinal Nouns.

Ordinal nouns are such as express the order of things; as,

Primêiro first	Décimo-oitávo eighteenth
Segúndo second	Décimo-nôno nineteenth
Terceiro third	Vigėsimo, or ventėsimo twen-
Quárto fourth	ftieth
Quinto fifth	Vigésimo-primêiro one and
Sêxto sixth	twentieth
Sétimo seventh	Trigésimo thirtieth
Oitávo eighth	Quadragésimo, or quaranté-
Nôno ninth	simo fortieth
Décimo tenth	Quinquagésimo fiftieth
Undécimo, or onzêno, eleventh	Sexagésimo sixtieth
Duodécimo twelfth	
Décimo-tércio thirteenth	Septuagésimo seventieth Octagésimo eightieth
Décimo-quárto fourteenth	Nonagésimo ninetieth
Décimo-quinto fifteenth	Centésimo the hundredth
Décimo-sêxto sixteenth	Millésimo the thousandth
Décimo-séptimo seventeenth	U'ltimo the last
TOL SEVENTO SEVENTEENTIN	1 -/last

The proportionable numbers are, simplez, duplicádo or dobrádo, triplicado or tríplice or tresdobrádo, quadruplicádo or quádruplo, cêntuplo; a single, double, threefold, fourfold, a hundredfold.

The distributive nouns are, hum á hum, one by

one; dous á dous, two by two.

In English all ordinal numbers may be formed into adverbs: but in Portuguese they have only primeiramente, and secundariamente, or segundariamente, first, secondly; and to express thirdly, fourthly, &c. they say, em terceiro lugar, em quarto lugar, in the third place, in the fourth place.

A Method (for those who understand French) to learn a great many Portuguese words in a short time.

We must observe, that the French syllable cha is generally expressed in Portuguese by ca, rejecting the h. Examp. Charbon, charité chasteté, chapón, chapélle, chapítre, &c. the Portuguese say, carvaő caridáde castidáde, capaő, capélla capítulo, &c. Observe also the following rules.

French words ending in ance, or ence; as, constance, vigilance, cleménce, prudénce, &c. in Portuguese end in ância, or ência; as constância, vigilância, clemência, pru-

dência, &c.

Agne makes ânha; montagne, montânha; campagne,

campânha.

Îe makes *ia*; comedie, *comédia*. Here the accent is upon the *e*, and not upon the *i*, as in French; poesie, poesia.

Oire makes ória; gloire, glória; victoire, victória.

Ure makes úra; imposture, impostúra; figure, figúra.

Ison makes zaő; raison, razaő; prison, prizaő On makes aő; charbon, carvaő; baron, baraő.

Ulier makes ulár: regulier, regulár; particulier, particulár.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in e

Ant, ânte; vigilant, vigilânte; amant, amânte. Ent, adjective, énte; prudent, prudênte; diligent, diligênte. Té makes dáde; pureté, puridáde; liberalité, liberalidade.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in vel.

Able, vel; louable, louvável; aimable, amável.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in ez.

Ois, names of nations, ez, François, Francês; Anglois, Inglêz.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in o

Ain, and ien, names of nations, ano; Romain, Romano : Italien, Italiano; Napolitain, Napolitano.

Aire, ário : salaire, salário ; téméraire, temerário.

Eau, eo, chapeau; chapéo.

Ent, substantive, ênto; sacrement, sacramênto.
Eux, ôso; généreux; generôso; gracieux, graciôso.
If ino: actif native, passif naceire.

If, ivo; actif, activo, passif, passivo. C, co; porc, pôrco; Turc, Túrco.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in or. Eur, or; terreur, terrôr; humeur, humôr; chaleur, calôr.

Change of Terminations of the Verbs and Participles.

Er, in the infinitive mood of the first conjugation, makes $\acute{a}r$; aimer; $am\acute{a}r$; chanter, $cant \acute{a}r$.

Ir makes ir, in the infinitive mood; as, partir, partir; sentir, sentir.

Oir makes êr in the infinitive mood; as, concevoir concebêr.

The participles in é make ádo; aimé, amádo; parlé falládo.

The participles in i make ido: dormi, dormido; menti, mentido.

The participles in u make do; as, conçu, concebido, entendu entendido.

There are a great many Portuguese words that have no manner of analogy with the French, which prevent these rules from being general.

CHAP. IV.

OF PRONOUNS.

THE pronouns are personal, conjunctive, mixed, positive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, or improper.

Of Personal Pronouns.

The pronouns personal are ℓu and nos for the first person; they serve for the masculine and the feminine.

Tu and vos for the second: these serve also for the masculine and feminine.

E'lle, for the third person of the masculine gender: and *illes* in the plural.

E'lla, for the third person of the feminine gender,

makes in the plural éllas.

The pronouns personal are declined with the article indefinite, de, a, \acute{a} , da.

The Declensiom of Personal Pronouns.

FIRST PERSON.

Singular Number.

Nom. Eu, I

Gen. de mim, of me

Dat. a mim, to me

Acc. a mim, me

Abl. de mim, or por mim,

from or by me

Plural Number.

Nom. nos, we
Gen. de nos, of us
Dat. a nos, or nos, us
Acc. a nos, us
Abl. de nos, or por nos, from
or by us

With me is rendered by comigo; and sometimes they add the pronoun mesmo to it; me is expressed by me in the Portuguese; as speak to me, fallai-me; tell me, dizéi-me: send me, mandai-me; write to me, escrevéi-me; elle disse-me, he told me, &c.

With us is rendered in Portuguese by com nôsco.

Us is rendered by nos. Examp. tell us, dizéi-nos; give us, dái-nos; show us, mostrái-nos: elle dísse-nos he told us, &c. In these examples us is not a pronoun personal, but conjunctive, as you will see hereafter.

SECOND PERSON.

Singular.

Plural.

Nom. tu, thou Gen. de ti, of thee Dat. a ti, or te, to thee Acc. a ti, or te, thee Abl. de ti, or por ti, from or by thee

Nom. v6s, ye or you Gen. de vos, or vos, you Dat. a vós, or vós, you Acc. a vós, or vós, you Abl. de vós, or por vós, from or by you

With thee is rendered by comtigo; and sometimes they add to it the pronoun mesmo. You, or yourself, after imperatives are rendered by vos, and not vós; as, be you contented, contentái vos; show yourself, mostrái-vos: hide yourself, escondéi-vos.

Thee, or thyself, are expressed after imperatives by

te; as mostrate, show yourself.

With you is rendered in Portuguese by com vôsco.

(For the Masculine). THIRD PERSON.

Singular.

Plural.

Nom. élle, he or it Gen. délle, of him or of it. Dat. a élle, to him, or to it Acc. a élle, him, or it or by him, or it

Nom, elles, they Gen. délles, of them Dat. a élles, to them Acc. a élles, them Abl. délle, or por élle, from Abl. dêlles, or por élles, from or by them

The Portuguese have no particular pronoun, as the English it, for things that are inanimate.

The pronoun him, or to him, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese, by lhe, and

them, or to them, by lhes.

With him is rendered in Portuguese sometimes by com élle, and sometimes by comsigo, to which they add the pronoun mêsmo.

THIRD PERSON. (Feminine).

Singular.

Plural.

Nom. élla, she or it
Gen. délla, of her or of it
Dat. a élla, to her or to it
Acc. a élla, her or it
Abl. délla, or por élla, from
or by her or it

Nom. éllas, they
Gen. déllas, of them
Dat. a éllas, to them
Acc. a éllas, them
Abl. déllas, or por éllas, from
or by them

The pronoun her or to her, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese by lhe, and them, or to them, by lhes; as will be seen in the pronouns conjunctive.

With her is rendered in Portuguese by com élla

or comsigo.

Of the Pronoun si, himself, or one's self.

There is another pronoun personal that serves indifferently for the masculine and feminine: this is si, one's self. It has no nominative.

Gen. de si, of one's self, himself, or herself. Dat. a si, to one's self, &c.
Acc. a si, one's self, &c.
Abl. de si, por si, from or by one's self.

It is joined with the pronoun mesmo or mesma; as de or por si mesmo, by himself; por si mesma, or de si mesma, by herself; o homem não âma senão a si mesmo, man loves himself only; quem não he bom senão pâra si, não he bem que viva, who cares for nobody but himself, does not deserve to live; o vicio he abominável de si mesmo, vice is in itself hateful; a terra de si, or de si mesma he ferțil, the earth is fruitful of itself.

Observe that they join also the pronoun mesmo to pronouns personal, as the French do with their pronoun même, viz.

Eu mêsmo, myself
Tu mêsmo, thyself
E'lle mêsmo, himself
E'lla mêsma, herself
o hômem mêsmo, man himself;

nós mésmos, ourselves
vós mésmos, yourselves
élles mésmos
éllas mésmas
a mésma virtúde, virtue itself-

1st. Observe, that mésmo with the article is also an adjective, signifying the same; thus o mésmo, a mésma, os mésmos, as mésmas, the same, relating to some nouns expressed or understood,

2dly. Note, Also that the adjective $\delta utro$, other, is joined to the plural of the pronouns personal, I and thou; thus, $n\delta s$ $\delta utros$, we; $v\delta s$ $\delta utros$, you.

3dly. Comsigo may be rendered in English (as we have said above) by with him and with her; and it may be rendered also by with them in the plural; and sometimes by about him, about her or about them. Examp. Elle or élla, núnca tráz dinhéiro comsigo, he, or she, never has money about him, or about her.

Of Conjunctive Pronouns.

The pronouns conjunctive are so called, because they always come immediately before or after the verb that governs them.

The pronouns conjunctive bear a great resemblance to the pronouns personal; the pronouns per-

sonal are,

Eu, I; tu, thou; élle, he; nós, we; vós, ye; élles, they. There are seven pronouns conjunctive, viz. me, to me, or me: te, to thee, or thee: se, to himself, or himself, to herself, or herself; lhe to him, or him, to her, or her; nos, to us, or us; vos, to you, or you, lhes, to them, or them.

EXAMPLE.

Isto me agráda, this pleases me; hé-me necessário, I want. Déos te vê, God sees thee. Ella se lôuva, she praises herself.

Eu lhe diréi, I will tell him, or I will tell her.

Eu lhes prometti, I promised them: as well for the masculine as the feminine.

The pronoun conjunctive, lhe, is always put after the verb, when it is in the imperative mood; as dizéi-lhe tell him; cort ái-lhe as ázas, cut his wings; but when the verb is in some other mood, it may be put either before or after it; as élle lhe cortôu, or élle cortôu-lhe a cabéça, he has cut off his head. The same observation applies to the other pronouns conjunctive.

The pronoun conjunctive, se, is sometimes followed by me, lhe, &c. as offeréce-se me, it is offered to me; representou-se lhe, it was represented to him,

&c.

1st Note, that the pronouns conjunctive are very often joined to a verb, preceded or followed by the verb haver. Examp. Dar-lhe hei tanta pancada, or eu lhe hei de dar tanta pancada, que, &c. I will cudgel him so much, that, &c.

2dly. Lhe is sometimes rendered in English by you. Examp. Que lhe parèce aquillo? What do you think of that? assenta no que lhe digo, be persuaded,

or believe what I tell you.

Of Mixed Pronouns.

There are some pronouns in Portuguese which are composed of the pronouns personal and conjunctive, and which therefore are called mixed.

These pronouns are formed by changing the letter e of the pronoun conjunctive into o for the masculine, and a for the feminine; thus, to me of it, instead of me o, or me a, you must say, mo or ma. In like manner, instead of lhe o or lhe a you must say, tho or lha, &c. as you may observe in the following pronouns mixed, or rather contracted.

nee.
hee.
hee.
•
١.

EXAMPLES.

volos, m. p. you of them, or them to you.

Pâra dár-lho, to give it to him or to her. Dái-mo, give it to me.
Eu to daréi, I'll give it you.
Entrégo-to, I deliver it to you.
Dize-lho, you tell it him, or her.
Entréga-lhos, deliver them to him, or to her.
Lá selo haja, leave that to himself.
Elle nolo disse, he told us of it.
Eu volos mandaréi, I'll send to you.

If the verbs are in the infinitive, the pronouns mixed may be put either before or after the verbs: as, para dizérmo, or para mo dizér, to tell me it; but if the verbs are in the gerund, the pronouns

mixed must be transposed; as, dizêndomo, and

not mo dizêndo, in telling me it.

You must make use of these pronouns, both masculine and feminine, according to the gender of the thing named, sent or delivered, and not of the person to whom the thing is said, sent, given, &c.

Of Possessive Pronouns.

Pronouns possessive, so called, because they denote that the thing spoken of belongs to the person or thing they are connected with, are of two sorts, absolute and relative. See the remarks hereafter.

The English have no article in the nominative before the pronouns possessive; but the Portuguese have, as, my, o mêu, a mínha, fem. Plur. os mêus, as mínhas, fem.

The pronouns possessive in Portuguese are the

following:

Sing. mêu, m. mínha f.
Plur. mêus, m. mínhas, f.
Sing. têu, m. túa, f.
Plur. têus, m. túas. f.
Plur. sêus, m.
Plur. seus, m.
Plur. séus, m.
his or its.
Sing. súa, f.
Plur. súas, f.
Plur. nósso, m. nóssa, f.
Plur. nóssos, m. nóssa, f.
Plur. vósso, m. vóssa, f.
Plur. vósso, m. vóssa, f.
Plur. vósso, m. vóssa, f.

The pronouns possessive are declined with the definite article o for the masculine, and a for the feminine.

EXAMPLE.

Singular.

Nom. o mêu livro, my book. Gen. do mêu livro, of my book. Dat. ao mêu livro, to my book. Acc. mêu livro, my book.

Abl. do ou pêllo mêu livro, from or by my book.

Plural.

Nom. os mêus lívros, my books. Gen. dos mêus lívros, of my books. Dat. aos mêus lívros, to my books.

Abl. dos ou péllos mêus l'ivros, from or by my books.

Decline all the other masculines after the same manner, and their feminines by the article a; as my house; a minha cása; of my house, da minha cása, &c.

Note, you must not use the definite article when the pronouns possessive precede nouns of quality, as well as those of kindred, but the indefinite article de, a, &c.

EXAMPLE.

Vóssa magestáde, your majesty. De vóssa magestáde, of your majesty, &c. Méu páy, my father. De méu páy, of my father, &c.

From the above examples it appears that nouns declined by the definite article have no article in the nominative.

Though the definite article is sometimes used before nouns of kindred, yet we ought not to use it, according to the old proverb: tu vivendo bonos, scri-

bendo sequare peritos.

Seu is sometimes used instead of vósso and vóssa, in the polite way of speaking: thus, tênho o sêu lîvro, I have your book: fallêi ao sêu criádo, I spoke to your servant; os sêus ôlhos são formósos, your eyes are handsome.

Remarks upon the Possessives.

The pronouns possessive absolute always come before the noun they belong to. We have expressed them above.

Pronouns possessive relative are so called because they not being joined to their substantive, suppose it either expressed before, or understood, and are related to it. They are the following:

	Masc.	Fem.	
Sing.	Mêu	mínha i	1 mina
Plur.	Mêus	mínhas	\frac{1111116}{2}
Sing.	T êu	túa	thine
Plur.	Têus	túas	} unite
Sing.	Sêu	súa, hers	1
Plur.		suas, theirs	
Sing.	Nósso	nóssa	Jours
	Nóssos	nóssa s	Jours
Sing.	Vósso	vóssa	\
	V6ssos	vóssas	yours

To express in Portuguese it is mine, it is thine,

&c. we must say he mêu, he têu, &c.

The pronouns possessive absolute do not agree in gender with the noun of the possessor, as in English, but with that of the thing possessed; as, a máy âma a séu filho, the mother loves her son; o pái âma a súa filha the father loves his daughter. Thus the pronoun masculine séu, in Portuguese, is sometimes rendered by her in English, and the feminine súa by his.

The same observation is to be made upon the possessives relative, according to the gender of the noun that is understood; we say of a hat (for instance) belonging to a lady, he o séu, it is hers; because the noun understood, viz. chapéo, hat, is of

the masculine gender.

We have already said, that séu and súa, are sometimes rendered into English by your, when they are absolute: they are also sometimes rendered into English by yours, when they are pronouns relative, speaking politely of any thing belonging to a gentleman or lady, he o séu, or he a súa, it is yours;

but if the gentleman or lady is not present, or if they are not directly spoken to, though present, then the pronouns seu and sua must be rendered

into English by his or hers.

Note, That the pronouns possessive absolute, in Portuguese, agree also in number with the noun of the thing possessed; hence we say a súa história, its history, speaking of a kingdom, province, &c. or, his history, speaking of any history composed by a man; or her history, speaking of that written by a woman; or, their history, speaking of that written by several hands, or of several people. example it will be seen, that the Portuguese have no particular pronoun possessive for things that are inanimate, corresponding with the English pronoun its. Hence, finally, it follows, that when the Portuguese possessives sêu and súa are relative, they are rendered into English by his, or hers, or theirs, according to the gender and number of the noun of the possessor that is understood.

The third pronoun personal, delle, of him, delles of them, della, of her, dellas, of them are sometimes added, to denote more plainly whose thing it is they speak of; as o seu livro, delles, their book; as

súas palávras délla, her words, &c.

The possessives absolute are left out when they are preceded by a verb, or by a pronoun conjunctive, which sufficiently denote whose thing it is they speak of; the article alone being sufficient; as dévo-lhe a vida, I owe my life to him, or to it; dóe-me a barriga, my belly aches.

When the pronouns possessive absolute are before nouns of different genders in the same sentence, and with which they are grammatically construed, they ought to be repeated; as, séu pái e súa mãy, his fa-

ther and mother: not sêu pái e mãy.

The pronoun possessive absolute is also used as in the following case, when we use the pos-

sessive relative; a friend of mine, hum dos mêus

amígos.

The possessives minha, túa, súa, nóssa, vossa, may be also relative, but with a different meaning. Examples; Levaréi a minha avânte, I will insist upon it, I will obtain it; élle levará a súa avânte, he will insist upon it, he will do it; levái a vossa avânte, go on with your resolution; fazêr das súas, to play tricks, to dodge.

Os méus, os séus, &c. signify my relations, or my friends, thy relations, or thy friends; as, os séus não o quérem, his parents or relations do not like him; déixa-o hir com os séus, let him go with his

people, his countrymen, &c.

When the pronoun possessive is accompanied by a pronoun demonstrative, we do not put the article in the nominative; we do not say o este meu livro, but este meu livro, this book of mine. But in all other cases the indefinite article is used; as d'este or deste vosso livro, &c.

Of the Pronouns Demonstrative.

They are called pronouns demonstrative, because they serve to point out or demonstrate any thing or person; as, this book, *éste livro*; that man, aquélle hómem,

There are three principal demonstratives, viz. *este*, this; *esse*, that; *aquélle*, that; *este* shews the thing or person that is just near or by us; *esse* shews the thing that is a little farther, or near the person; and *aquélle* shews what is very distant from the person who speaks, or is spoken of, and is expressed in English by *that there*, or *yonder*. *Esse*, *essa*, are used in writing to any person to express the place or town wherein he dwells; as *ténhofalládo néssa cidáde com múitosía migos*, I have spoken in your city with many friends.

These Pronouns are declined thus:

		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
(Nom.	Este	ésta	ísto	this
	Gen.	dêsta	désta	disto	of this
Singular	Dat	a êste		a isto	to this
Dingular	Acc.	âcta		isto	this
	Abl.	dâste		dísto	from this
	ZXDI	uesic	uesta	uisio	HOIH this
	Non	Anton	hatus		these
	Com.	Jana	éstas	ter	
Dland	Gen.	aestes	déstas	en	of these
Plural	Dat.	a estes	a éstas	No Neuter	to these
	Acc.	ëstes	éstas	2	these
	Abl.	dêste s	désta s	~	from these
			_		
		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
	Nom.	ėsse	éssa	isso	that or it
	Gen.	désse	déssa	dísso	of that, &c.
Singular {	Dat.	a êsse	a éssa	a isso	to that
	Acc.	ésse	éssa	isso	that
	Abl.	dêsse	déssa	disso	from that
				2000	
	Nom	âosee	éssas		those
Plural -	Gen.	dêcee	déssas	No Neuter	of those
Dluvel	Dot.	a åsser	a éssas	<u> </u>	to those
Flurar	Acc.	ânnan	éssas	Z	those
	ALI	J4		N _o	
	CADI.	aesses	déssas	1	from those
		7.5	17	NT 4	
		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular <	Nom.	aquêlle	aquélla	aquíllo	that
	Gen.	daquêlle	daquélla	daqu'illo	of that
Singular 4	Dat.	a aquêlle	a aquélla	a aquíllo	to that
	Acc.	aguêlle	aquélla		that
	Abl.	daquêlle	daquélla	daquíllo	from that
		1		•	
	r Nom.	aquêlles	aquéllas	H	those
	Gen.	daquelles	daquellas	ute	of those
Plural -	Dat.	a aquélles	a aquéllas	5 7	to those
2 - 01 - 11 2	Acc	anvelles	aquéllas	0 7	those
	Abl	daquêlles a aquélles aquêlles daquêlles	dannélla	Ž	from those
	CALUI.	adjucties	augucius		Hom those

There is an elision of the vowel of the indefinite article in the genitive and ablative of the pronouns éste and ésse both in the singular and plural; as déste, déstas, &c. instead of de éste, de éstas; so also in the neuter as disso, disto, instead of de isso, de isto. The same observation applies to the pronoun aquélle, wherein you will see another elision besides, in the dative case.

Both Portuguese and Spaniards have demonstratives of the neuter gender; though they do not agree with the substantives, as in Latin; they do not say isto hómem, but este hómem, this man. But the word côusa, thing, is always understood, though the neuter demonstrative does not agree with it; so that it is indifferently said isto, or esta côusa, this thing; isso, or essa côusa, that thing, &c. Example, isso he or essa he a côusa de que nos estâmos fallândo, that is the thing we are speaking of; aquillo he or aquella he a côusa que vos deveis fazer, that is the thing you must do, &c.

When the preposition em, in, comes before the pronouns demonstrative, the vowel is cut off, and the consonant m is changed into n; thus, instead of em éste, em ésta, em, isto em isso, em aquillo, they write and pronounce néste, nésta, nisto, nisso, &c.

in this, in that, &c.

The words ôtro, ôutra, are often joined to the pronouns demonstrative, cutting off the final e; as estôutro, essôutro, aquellôutro. Example; Estôutro hômem, this other man; estôutra molhêr, this other woman; essôutro hômem, that other man.

The pronoun *mésmo*, the same, is also frequently joined to the demonstrative; as *éste mésmo hómem*, this very same man; *aquillo mésmo*, that very same

thing.

Aqui, ali, and lá are sometimes added to the demonstrative, or to the noun that comes after it, in order to specify and particularize it still more; as

éste hómem aquí, this man; aquélla molhér lá, that woman: aquí, denoting a near, or present object;

and lá, a distant and absent one.

The pronouns aquélle, aquélla, aquéllas, aquéllas, when they relate to persons, and are followed by the relative que, are rendered into English by he who, or he that, she who, or that, they who, or that; as aquélle que âma a virtúde he felíz, he who loves virtue is happy; *aquélle que desprézão a sciência não conhècem o valór délla, they who despise learning know not the value of it. Observe, that when aquélle, aquélla, &c. are preceded by éste, ésta, &c. then éste signifies the last thing or person spoken of, and aquélle, &c. the first; as Cárlos fói grånde, Frederico ambicióso, éste valénte, aquélle poderoso, Charles was great, Frederic ambitious, the first powerful, the last courageous.

The pronoun possessive absolute his, her, their, construed in English with a noun followed by the pronoun relative who or that before a verb, is rendered in Portuguese by the genitive of the pronouns aquélle, aquélla, aquélles, followed by que, and the possessive is left out; as, all men blame his manners who often says that, which himself does not think, tôdo o múndo censúra o procedimento daquélle que tem por costúme dizer o que nao tem no pensamento; Providence does not prosper their labours that slight their best friends, a Providencia nao abencoa o trabálho daquélles que desprézao os séus melhóres amígos.

The English pronoun such followed by as or that (but not governed of the verb substantive to be), is also rendered into Portuguese by aquélles que, or aquélles táes que, or aquélle que; as, such as do not love virtue do not know it, aquélles or aquélles táes

que nao âmao a virtude, nao a conhécem.

The pronouns isso, isto, aquillo, before que, are Englished by what; as elle diz aquillo que sabe, he

says what he knows.

Aquélle is also used to shew contempt; as que quér aquélle hómem? What does that man desire?

Of the Pronouns Interrogative.

The pronouns interrogative serve to ask questions, and are as follows; who, what, which, quem, que, qual.

EXAMPLE.

Quem hé? Quem vos disse isso? Que querêis? Com que se sustênta?

Que estáis fazéndo?
De que se faz ísto?
Que lívro he êste?
Que negócios têndes?
Que cása hé?
De qual falláis vós?
Qual délles?
Quem or qual dos dôus?

who is it?
who told you so?
what will you have?
what does he maintain himself with?
what are you doing?
from what is this done?
what book is this?
what affairs have you?
what house is it?
which do you speak of?
which of them?
which or whether of the two?

These pronouns are thus declined:

Singular and Plural.

Masculine and Feminine.

Nom. quem who

Gen. de quem of whom

Dat. a quem to whom

Acc. quem whom

Abl. de quem from whom.

Singular and Plural.

Masculine and Feminine.

Nom. que what

Gen. de que of what

Gen. de que of what
Dat. a que to what
Acc. que what
Abl. de que from what

Qual is used in speaking both of persons and things, and is declined thus:

Singular. Nom. qual Gen. de qual Dat. á qual Acc. qual Abl. da qual Masculine and Feminine. which or what of which or what to which or what which or what from which or what

Plural. Masculine and Feminine.

Nom. quáes Gen. de quáes Dat. a quáes Acc. quáes Abl. de quáes which or what of which or what to which or what which or what from which or what

Observe, that when the word quer is added to quem, or qual, it quite alters the meaning; quemquér signifying whoever, or any person, and qualquér any one, whether man, woman, or thing; and sometimes they add the participle que to them, as quemquér, que, &c.

Of the Pronouns Relative.

Pronouns relative are those which shew the relation, or reference, which a noun has to what follows it. They are the following; qual, which, que, that or which; cújo, whose; quem, who.

Qual, in a sense of comparison, is followed by tal, and then qual is Englished by as, and tal by of.

N. B. When qual is only a relative, it is declined

with the definite articles o or a.

The pronoun que may be relative both to persons and things, and is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; as o livro que, the book which; os livros que, the books which; a cárta que, the letter which; as cártas que, the letters which; o méstre que ensina, the master who teacheth; a molhér que ténho, the wife that I have; o hómem que éu âmo, the man whom I love; it is thus declined:

Singular and Plural.

Nom. que Gen. de que Dat. a que Acc. que Abl. de que which or who
of which or of whom
to which or to whom
which or whom
from which or from whom

Que is sometimes a conjunction; as créyo que hiréi, I believe that I shall go. See the Syntax.

The relative quem, who, is only relative to persons; but in the nominative case of the singular is rendered into English by he who, or who; as, quem falla déve considerár, &c. he who speaks ought to consider, &c. éu nao séi quem, I know not who.

Observe, that quem is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; but it has no nominative in the

plural.

Quem is declined thus:

Singular and Plural.

Nom. quem he who, or she who, or whoever.

Gen. de quem of whom.

Dat. a quem to whom.

Acc. quem whom.

Abl. de quem from whom.

Quem is sometimes a particle disjunctive, and then it signifies some; as, quem cânta, e quem ri, some sing, and some laugh; and sometimes it serves for exclamation; as quem me déra estár em casa! how fain would I be at home!

Cújo Cúja, is declined thus:

		Masc.	Fem.	
(Nom.	cújo	cúja	
	Gen.	de cújo	de cúja	of whose.
Sing. ≺	Dat.	a cújo		to whose.
4	Acc.	cújo	cúja	
-	Abl.	de cújo	de cúja	from whose.

The plural is formed by adding s to the singular;

as, cújos, cújas, whose, &c.

Note, that cújo must be followed by the noun or term which it refers to, and with which it agrees in gender, number and case; as, a pessóa cúja reputação vós admiráis, the person whose reputation you wonder at; o céo cújo soccorro núnca fálta, heaven, whose assistance never fails; cúja bélla cára, whose fair visage: cújas bellêzas, whose beauties; a cújo

pái, to whose father; de cújos irmãos ténho recebido, from whose brothers I have received. Observe also that cújo is not to be repeated, though the terms which it refers to be of different number; as, cúja valía e bras, whose value and deeds.

Note, that, o, a, os, as, lo, la, &c. are also pronouns relative, when joined to verbs. See the

Syntax, chap. iv.

Of the Improper Pronouns.

These pronouns are called *improper*, because indeed they are not properly pronouns, although they bear a great resemblance to pronouns, as well as to adjectives. They are the following:

Humone. somebody. Alguém Algum some. Ninguém nobody. Nenhum Cadahúm every one, each. Câda every. Outro, ôutra other. another. Outrem

Qualquér, any one; whether man, or woman, or thing. Qualquér dos dous, either of the two, or whethersoever of the two.

Quemquér, whoever, or any person. Tôdo, all, or every. Tal, such &c.

Hum has two terminations, viz. hum, huma; and in the plural it makes huns, and humas. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

Alguém has only one termination, and is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article.

Algúm, has two terminations, viz. algúm, algúma; and in the plural, algúns, algúmas. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

Ninguém, has only one termination, and is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article; ninguém o cré, nobody believes it.

Nenhúm has two terminations, viz. nenhúmas, nenhúma, and in the plural nenhúns, nenhúmas; and is only declinable with the indefinite article; nenhúm hómem, no man; de nenhúm efféito, of no effect.

Cadahúm has two terminations, viz. cadahúm, cadahúma; but it has no plural, and is only declinable

with the indefinite article.

Câda has but one termination. It has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article: câda dia, every day; câda mez, every month.

Outro has two terminations, viz. Sutro, Sutra; and in the plural, Sutros, Sutras. It is declinable both

with the definite and indefinite articles.

Outrem has only one termination. It has no

plural, and takes the indefinite article.

Qualquér has but one termination. It makes quaesquér in the plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. Qualquer is said both of persons

and things.

Quemquér has but one termination. It has no plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. It is rendered in English by any body: quemquér vos dirá any body will tell you. Quemquér is used in

speaking of a person.

Todo has two terminations, viz. tôdo, tôda; and in the plural, tôdos, tôdas. It is declinable with the indefinite article. It is sometimes taken substantively, and then it signifies the whole; as o tôdo hé mayôr que a súr parte, the whole is bigger than its part.

Tal has only one termination. It makes the inthe plural, and it is declined with the indefinite article. It is common to the masculine and to the feminine genders; and sometimes it is joined to

qual; as, tal qual élle hé, such as it is.

Tal supplies sometimes the place of the person whose name is not specified; as, hum tal velháco déve sér castigádo, such a rogue ought to be punished.

CHAP. V.

OF VERBS.

THE verb is a part of speech which serves to express that which is attributed to the subject in denoting the *being* or *condition* of the things and persons spoken of, the *actions* which they do, or the *impressions* they receive.

The first and the most general division of Verbs

is into personal and impersonal.

A verb personal is conjugated by three persons.

EXAMPLE.

	êu âmo	I love
Sing.	tu âmas	thou lovest
	êlle âma	he loves
	nós amâmos	we love
Plur.	vós amáis	ye love
	êlles âmaő 💎 ,	they love

A verb impersonal is conjugated by the third person of the singular number only; as *chôve*, it rains, *convêm*, it behoves.

A verb, considered in regard to syntax, is of four sorts, viz. active, passive, neuter, and reciprocal.

Some of the verbs are regular, and others irregular.

Some are also called auxiliary verbs. We shall

give their definitions in their proper places.

Before you begin to learn the conjugations, it will be proper to observe, that all the verbs may be conjugated with the pronouns personal, eu, tu, élle, &c. or without them.

Of the Auxiliary Verbs.

The auxiliary verbs are so called, because they aid the conjugation of other verbs. They are four in Portuguese, viz. havêr, têr, to have; sêr, estâr, to be. The auxiliary verb sêr, to be, is also called the verb substantive, because it affirms what the subject is, and is always followed by a noun that particularizes what that subject is; as sêr rîco, prudênte, dôuto, to be rich, wise, learned, &c.

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb, têr, or havêr, to have.

THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

Sing, tu tênho, ou hey tu têns, ou has êlle têm, ou há nos têmos, ou havêmos, ou hêmos Plur. vos têndes, ou havêis, ou hêis êlles têm, ou haö	I have thou hast he has or hath we have you have they have
Preterimperfect	Ť
Sing. $\begin{cases} \hat{e}u \text{ tinha, ou havia, ou hia} \\ tu \text{ tinhas, ou havias, ou hias} \\ \hat{e}lle \text{ tinha, ou havia, ou hia} \end{cases}$	I had thou hadst he had
Plur. nós tínhamos, ou havíamos, ou híamos vós tínhieis, ou havíeis, ou híeis élles, tínhao, ou havíao, ou híao	we had you had they had
Preterperfect definite.	
Sing. \{ \text{\$\frac{\epsilon}{tu}\$ tive on houveste} \\ \text{\$\text{\$\epsilon}\$} & \text{\$\epsilon\$ to houveste} \\ \text{\$\epsilon\$} & \text{\$\empirical{\epsilon\$} & \text{\$\empirical{\empirical{\epsilon\$} & \text{\$\empirical{\epsilon\$} & \text{\$\empirical{\epsilon\$} & \text{\$\empirical{\epsilon\$} & \text{\$\empirical{\epsilon\$} & \text{\$\empirical{\epsilon\$} & \$\empirica	I had thou hadst he had
Plur. nós tivémos, ou houvémos, vós tivéstes, ou houvéstes élles tivéraő ou houveraő	we had you had they had

Preterperfect.

(eu ténho tido	I have had
Sing. { êu ténho tído tu téns tído	thou hast had
êlle têm tido	he has had
Plur. nós têmos tído vós têndes tído elles tem tído	we have had
Plur. \(\psi v\) os t\(\text{endes tido} \)	you have had
Cêlles tem tído	they have had

Preterpluperfect.

	Çêu tînha tîdo	I had had
Sing.	fêu tínha tído tu tínhas tído	thou had had
	Elle tinha tido	he had had
	nós tínhamos tído vós tínhieis tído élles tínhaő tído	we had had
Plur.∢	vós tínhieis tído	you had had
	êlles tinhaő tido	they had had

This tense may also be conjugated thus; tivéra, tivéra, tivéra, tivéramos, tivéreis, tivéraõ.

First Future.

Sing.	fêu terêi, ou haverêi tu terás, ou haverás fêlle terá, ou haverá	I shall or will have thou shalt or wilt have he shall or wilt have
1	nós terêmos, ou haverémos vós terêis, ou haverêis êlles teráõ, ou haveráõ	we shall or will have ye shall or will have they shall or will have

Second Future.

Sing. êu hèi de têr, ou havêr, &c. I must have, &c.

Third Future.

Sing. êu haverêi de têr, ou havêr, &c. I shall be obliged to have, &c.

Fourth Future.

Sing. êu havía de têr, ou havêr, &c. I was to have, &c.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing	tém tu, ou hájas tu	have thou
Sing.	[tém tu, ou hájas tu ténha élle, ou hája êlle	let him have
	tenhâmos, ou hajâmos nós	let us have
Plur.	tênde, ou havêi, vós	have ve
7	ténhaő, ou hájaő élles,	let them have

The imperative has no first person, because it is impossible to command one's self.

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

I join them together because their tenses are similar.

Present.

que éu ténha, ou hája that I have, or that I may have que tu ténhas, ou hâjas thou hast, or mayest have que élle ténha, ou hája he has or may have que nós tenhamos, ou hajámos we have, or may have

que vós tenháis, ou hajáis ye have, or may have que élles ténhao, ou hájao they have, or may have

First Preterimperfect.

que éu tivéra ou tivésse houvéra, ou houvésse que tu tivéras ou tivésses houvéras ou houvésses que êlle tivéra ou tivésse houvéra ou houvésse

that I had, or I should, would, &c. have, &c.

que nós tivéramos ou tivéssemos houvéramos ou houvéssemos que vós tivéreis ou tivésseis houvéreis on houvésseis que êlles tivéras ou tivéssem houvéraő ou houvéssem

that we had, or we should. would, &c. have, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

Cêu tería ou havería tu terías ou haverías Lêlle tería ou havería 🕻 nós teríamos ou haveríamos vós teríeis ou haverieis l êlles teríaō ou haveríaō

I should, would, or could have, &c.

we should, would, or could have, &c.

Preterperfect. que êu ténha tído ou havido que tu ténhas tído ou havido que élle ténha tído ou havído que nós tenhâmos tído ou havido we have had Plur. que vos tenháis tido ou havido que élles tênhaō tído ou havido

that I have had thou hast had he has had you have had they have had

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing.

se êu tivéra ou tivésse

se tu tivéras ou tivésses

se êlle tivéra ou tivésse

se nos tivéramos ou tivéssemos

se vos tivéreis ou tivésseis

se êlles tivérao ou tivéssem

se elles tivérao ou tivéssem

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing. $\begin{cases} eu \ teria \\ tu \ terias \\ elle \ teria \\ nós \ teriamos \\ vós \ terieis \\ elles \ teriaõ \end{cases}$ $\begin{cases} tido \\ I \ should \ have \ had, &c. \end{cases}$

First Future.

Sing. Se êu tivér

tu tivéres

êlle tivér

se nós tivérmos

Plur. Se nós tivérdes

êslle tivérem

if I shall have
thou shalt have
if we shall have
you shall have
they shall have

This tense may be conjugated also thus: houver, houveres, houver; houvermos, houverdes, houverem. See Syntax of the auxiliary Verbs.

Second Future.

It is composed of the first future and the participle.

Sing. $\begin{cases} se \ \ell u \ tiv\'er \\ tiv\'er es \\ tiv\'er \\ tiv\'er mos \\ tiv\'er des \\ tiv\'er em \end{cases} t\'ido \begin{cases} if I shall have had, &c. \end{cases}$

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

Preterperfect. têr tído, to have had.

PARTICIPLES.

Preterit. Sing. tido, tida. Plur. tidos tidas, had.

Future. que há de têr, that is to have.

GERUNDS.

têndo, having or in having. têndo, tído, having had.

SUPINE.

The supine is supplied by the prepositions a or para, and the verb in the infinitive; as,

para têr, to have.

In like manner are conjugated its compounds conténho, deténho, manténho, &c.

Remarks upon the auxiliary verb, têr, to have.

The verb têr, to have, is an auxiliary or helping verb, which serves to conjugate other verbs: example, têr lído, to have read; nós têmos, feito, we have

done; élles tém visto, they have seen, &c.

When 'the verb têr is followed by the particle que, before an infinitive mood, it denotes the duty, inclination, &c. of doing any thing; as, que têndes que fazêr? what have you to do? tênho que fazêr hûma visîta, I must pay a visit; êlle tem muîto que dizêrvos, he has a great many things to tell you.

Of the auxiliary verb havêr.

This is one of the most useful verbs in Portuguese, since it is not only auxiliary to itself, as éu héi de havêr, I must have; éu havîa de havêr, I was to have &c. but also to all sorts of verbs; as éu héi de cantár, I will sing, or I must sing, or I am to sing; éu héi de hír, I must go; éu havía de fallár, I was to speak; éu héi de escrevér, I must write, &c. In which examples you may see that the verb havêr, when auxiliary, has generally the particle de and the verb of the infinitive mood after it; and

that then it denotes a firm resolution, possibility, or necessity of doing any thing, therefore it is not to be rendered into English by the verb to have; as you may see by the second, third, and fourth future of the indicative mood.

The verb havér, with the particle de, and the verb sér, to be, after it, is an auxiliary both to the passive verbs, and sometimes to the verb sér itself; as, héi de sér feliz, I shall be happy; O principe ha de sér respeitádo, the prince ought to be, or must be, re-

spected.

The same verb haver is also auxiliary without the particle de; but then it is put after the verb to which it is auxiliary; thus, dárvos-héi I will give you; dárlhe-héi, I will give to him, &c. In which examples you may observe, that the auxiliary verb havér is put after the verb and the pronouns conjunctive, te, lhe, &c. and sometimes it is put after the verbs and the pronoun mixed; as, mandar volohéi I'll send it to you. In the foregoing examples the verb haver may be put before the other verb; but then it requires the particle de, and has a different meaning; as, in the first example, you may say, héi de dárvos, I must give to you. Observe, also, that when the indicative present of the auxiliary verb haver is auxiliary to other verbs, as in the foregoing examples, you must cut off the last letters ei from the future of the verbs; and say dárlhe-héi, or-héi de dar-lhe; but not daréi lhe-héi, nor héi de daréi lhe. When the preterimperfect havia is to be auxiliary to any verb, and it is to be placed after it, you must make use of hia, hias, hia, hiamos, hieis, híão; and say, dar-lhe-hía, hias, &c. but not darlhe-havia, havias, &c. I should give to him, thou shouldst, &c.

To express interrogation put the pronoun personal after the verb, as in English thus teréi éu? shall I have? têmos nós? have we? tens tu? hast thou?

tem élle? has he? sometimes the pronouns are omitted; as, que farêmos? what shall we do? cantarėmos? shall we sing?

Havêr is sometimes Englished by to be; as que

ha de sêr de min? what is to become of me?

When we speak by negation, we must use the word não before the verb; as, não tenho, I have not; vós naő conhecéis, you do not know, &c.

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb ser, or estár, to be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

we are

you are

they are

eu sou or estou tu és or estás thou art êlle hé or está nós sômos or estâmos vós sôis or estáis êlles sao or estáo

Preterpluperfect.

eu éra or estáva I was éras or estávas thou wast éra or estáva he was nós éramos or estávamos we were éreis or estáveis vou were éraő or estávaő they were

Preterperfect definite.

êu fui or estive fôste or estivéste fôi or estêve thou wast he was fômos or estivémos we were fôstes or estivéstes you were fôrao or estivérao they were

Preterperfect.

The preterperfect is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb têr, to have, and its own participle, sido, or estádo.

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is compounded of the preterimperfect indicative, and the participle sido or estádo.

Sing. { êu tínha sído or estádo tínhas sído or estádo thou hadst been tínha sído or estádo he had been tínhamos sído or estádo tínheis sído or estádo you had been tínhaõ sído or estádo they had been

It may also be conjugated thus; fôra, or estivéra; fôras, or estivéras; fôra, or estivéra; fôramos, or estivéramos; fôreis, or estivéreis; fôraõ, or estivéraõ.

Future.

Sing. \begin{cases}
\text{\$\frac{\ell}{e}u\$ ser\hat{e}i\$ or \$\estar\hat{a}s\$ thou shalt be thou shalt be ser\hat{a} or \$\estar\hat{a}s\$ he shall be ser\hat{e}mos or \$\estar\hat{e}mos\$ we shall be ser\hat{e}is or \$\estar\hat{e}is\$ you shall be they shall be \end{cases}

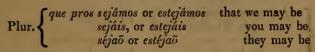
IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. { sê tu or está be thou séja or estéja elle let him be sejámos or estejámos nós let us be séde or estái vós be you séjaő or estéjaő élles let them be

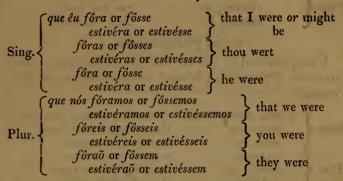
OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

Present.

Sing. $\begin{cases} que \ \acute{e}u \ s\acute{e}ja \ \text{or} \ est\acute{e}ja \\ s\acute{e}ja \ \text{or} \ est\acute{e}ja \end{cases}$ that I may be, or that I be thou mayst be, or be he may be, &c.



First Preterimperfect.

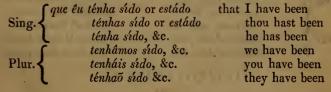


Second Preterimperfect.

Sing.	'êu sería or estaría serías or estarías	I should or would be thou shouldest be	
~~~»· }	sería or estaría	he should be we should be	
Plur.	serieis or estarieis	you should be	
t	seríaő or estaríaő	they should be	

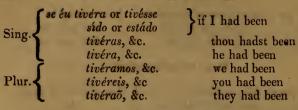
## Preterperfect.

It is compounded of the present conjunctive of the auxiliary verb  $t\acute{e}r$ , and its own participle  $s\acute{i}do$ , or  $est\acute{a}do$ .



## Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *tér*, and its own participle.



# Second Preterpluperfect.

Compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb têr, and its own participle sido or estádo.

	eu tería sído or estádo	I should or would have been
Sing.	terías, &c.	thou shouldst have been
	tería, &c.	he should have been
1	teriamos, &c.	we should have been
Plur.		you should have been
	teriaõ, &c.	they should have been

## First Future.

	quândo êu fôr or estivér	when I shall be
Sing.	fôres or estivéres	thou shalt be
	fôr or estivér	he shall be
	főrmos or estivérmos	we shall be
Plur.	fôrdes or estivérdes	you shall be
	fôrem or estivérem	they shall be

## Second Future.

Compounded of the future subjunctive of the verb ter, and its own participle.

Sing. Squar	ido êu tivér sído or estádo tivéres sído, &c.	thou shalt have been
Plur.	tivér sído, &c. tivérmos sído, &c. tivérdes sído, &c. tivérem sído, &c.	he shall have been we shall have been you shall have been they shall have been

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

sêr or estár to be Preterperfect.

têr sído or estádo to have been

PARTICIPLES.

Pret.

sído or estádo, been

Future.

que há de sér, or estár, that is to be

GERUNDS.

sêndo or estândo being têndo sído or estádo having been

SUPINE.

para sêr or estár to be

Remarks upon the verb sêr and estár.

There is a considerable difference between these verbs, sêr and estár, both in Portuguese and Spanish. In English there is no word to distinguish them, being both rendered into English by to be. Sêr signifies the proper and inseparable essence of a thing, its quality or quantity; sêr homem, to be a man; sêr bôm, to be good; sêr âlto, to be tall; sêr lârgo, to be wide; sêr brânco, to be white, &c. But estár denotes a place, or any adventitious quality; as, estár em Lôndres, to be in London; estár de saúde, to be in health; estár frío, to be cold; estár quênte, to be warm; estár doênte, to be sick; estár infadádo, to be angry; estár allégre, to be merry, &c.

Estár may be used before the gerunds, but not sér; therefore you may say, estôu fallândo, lendo, &c. I am speaking, reading, &c. but not sôu fallândo,

&c.

The three Conjugations of regular Active Verbs.

A regular verb is such as is confined to general rules in its conjugation.

A verb active denotes the action or impression of the subject, and governs a noun which is the object of that action or impression; as, amár a virtúde, to love virtue; recebér cártas, to receive letters.

The regular Portuguese verbs have three different terminations in the infinitive; viz. in ar, er, ir; as, amár, to love; temér, to fear; admittír, to admit.

# An easy Method of learning to conjugate the Portuguese Verbs.

I have reduced all the tenses of the Portuguese verbs to eight; four of which are general, and have the same terminations in all the verbs; and the other four may be likewise made general by changing some letters, and all the conjugations reduced to one.

The general tenses are, the future indicative, the first and second preterimperfect subjunctive, and the first future subjunctive.

The future indicative is terminated in all the verbs, in

réi, rás, rá; rémos, réis, rao.

The imperfect subjunctive, in

ra or sse, ras or sses, ra or sse; rámos, or ssemos, réis or sséis, raõ or ssem.

The second imperfect, in ria, rias, ria; riamos, rieis, riaõ

The first future subjunctive, in es, mos, des, em.

I have only given the termination of the second person singular of the future subjunctive, because the first and third of the same number are like their respective infinitives of the three conjugations, which, however, keep both their last consonant and vowel before the terminations I have marked for the second person singular, and for the whole plural. As to the future indicative, you have only to add *éi* to the respective present infinitive of the three conjugations, in order to form the first person singular; and if you add to the same infinitive present as, you will form the second person singular of it, and so of all the rest, by adding to the infinitive present, a, emos, eis, aõ.

The imperfect subjunctive has two terminations for every person, both in the singular and plural; but if you cut off the last consonant r of the infinitive, and then add to it the terminations above mentioned, you form the imperfect subjunctive, according to its two different terminations. Lastly, if you cut off the last consonant of the infinitive, and add to it the terminations above-mentioned, you will form the second imperfect subjunctive.

The present indicative of the three conjugations is formed by changing the last letters of the infinitive, viz. ar, er, ir, into o; as, amo, entendo, admitto, from amar, entender, admittir.

The preterimperfect indicative is formed in the first conjugation, by changing the last consonant of the infinitive, viz. r, into va, vas, va, v'amos, v'e'is,  $v\~a\~o$ ; but in the second conjugation it is formed by changing the termination er of the infinitive into ia, ias, ia, iamos, ieis,  $i\~a\~o$ ; and in the third by changing the last consonant r of the infinitive into a, as, a; amos, e'is,  $a\~o$ .

The perfect definite in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination ar of the infinitive into éi, áste óu, ámos, ástes, áraő; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination er of the infinitive into i, éste, éo, émos, éstes, éraő. In the third conjugation, the same tense

is formed by changing the termination ir of the in-

finitive into i, iste, io, imos, istes, irao.

As to the imperative mood, you have only to observe, that the second person singular is always the same as the third person singular of the present in-

dicative, in all the conjugations.

The participles of the preterperfect tense in the first conjugation are formed by changing the last consonant r of the infinitive into do for the masculine, and da for the feminine; and into dos, das, for the plural; but when you come to verbs of the second conjugation, you change the termination r of the infinitive into ido, ida, &c.

In the third conjugation, the last consonant r of the infinitive must be changed into do for the mas-

culine, da for the feminine, &c.

# First Conjugation of the verbs in ar.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

I shall add the pronouns personal, éu, tu, élle, &c. no more.

#### Present.

âmo âmas âma amâmos amáis âmaõ I love thou lovest he loves we love ye love they love

### Preterimperfect.

amáva amávas amáva amávamos amáveis amávaõ I did love thou didst love he did love we did love you did love they did love

### Preterperfect definite.

améi amáste amôu amámos amástes amáraő I loved thou lovedst he loved we loved you loved they loved

### Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle amádo, and the present indicative auxiliary verb  $t \ell r$ .

ténho amádo tens amádo tem amádo têmos amádo têndes amádo tém amádo I have loved thou hast loved he has loved we have loved you have loved they have loved

### Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle amádo and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb têr.

N. B. It may be conjugated thus, amára, amáras, amára, amáramos, amáreis, amáraõ, or,

tínha amádo, tínhas amádo tínha amádo tínhamos amádo tínheis amádo tínhaő amádo I had loved thou hadst loved he had loved we had loved you had loved they had loved

### Future.

amaréi amar**á**s amar**á**  I shall or will love thou shalt love he shall love amarémos amaréis amaráõ we shall love you shall love they shall love

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

âmu tu âme êlle amêmos nós amái vós âmem êlles love thou let him love let us love love you let them love

#### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

que êu âme âmes âme amêmos améis âmem

that I may love
thou mayest love
he may love
we may love
you may love
they may love

### First Preterimperfect.

que êu amára, or amásse amáras, or amásses amára, or amásse amáramos, or amássemos amáreis, or amásseis amáraő or amássen that I might or could love thou mightest love he might love we might love you might love they might love

When we find the conjunction if before the indicative imperfect, we must use the imperfect of the subjunctive or optative, when we speak by way of wish or desire; as, If I did love, se éu amásse, or amára, and not se éu amáva, if I had loved; if I had, se éu tivéra, tivésse, and not sé éu tínha; and so in all the verbs.

### Second Preterimperfect.

amaría amarías amaría amaríamos amaríeis amaría I should love thou shouldst love he should love we should love you should love they should love

### Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle amádo and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb têr.

que êu ténha amádo ténhas amádo ténha amádo tenhâmos amádo tenhâis amádo ténhaő amádo that I have loved.
thou hast loved.
he has loved
we have loved
you have loved
they have loved

### Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle  $am\acute{a}do$  and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb  $t\acute{e}r$ .

se êu tivéra or tivésse amádo
tivéras or tivésses amádo
tivéra or tivésse amádo
tivéramos or tivéssemos amádo
tivéreis or tivésseis amádo
tivérao or tivéssem amádo

if I had loved thou hadst loved he had loved we had loved you had loved they had loved

### Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle  $am\acute{a}do$  and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb  $t\acute{e}r$ .

teria amádo terias amádo teria amádo teriamos amádo terieis amádo teriao amádo

I should have loved thou shouldst have loved he should have loved we should have loved ye should have loved they should have loved

### Future.

quândo êu amár amáres amár amármos amárdes amárem when I shall love thou shalt love he shall love we shall love you shall love they shall love

### Second Future.

It is composed of the participle amádo, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb têr.

quândo eu tivér amádo tivéres amádo tivér amádo tivérmos amádo tivérdes amádo tivérem amádo

when I shall have loved thou shalt have loved he shall have loved we shall have loved you shall have loved they shall have loved

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

amár to love
Preterperfect.

têr amádo to have loved

### PARTICIPLE.

Present.

que âma, or amânte that loves

Pret.

amádo, masc. amáda, fem. loved

Future.

que há de amár, that is to love

#### GERUNDS.

amândo loving têndo amádo having loved

#### SUPINE.

para amár to love

Note, the verbs terminating in the infinitive in  $c\acute{a}r$  take qu in those tenses, where the c would otherwise meet with the vowel e; and those terminating in the infinitive in gar take an u in those tenses, where the g would otherwise meet with the same vowel e; that is to say, in the first person singular of the preterperfect definite, in the third person

singular, in the first and third plural of the imperative, and in the whole present subjunctive, which are the tenses I shall give by way of example in the verbs peccár and pagár.

Peccár, to sin.
Preterperfect definite.
éu pequéi I sinned—instead of peccéi

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

péque élle, let him sin: pequémos nós, let us sin; péquem élles, let them sin—and not pécce élle, &c.

Present subjunctive.

que êu péque, tu péques, that I may sin and not que êu pécce, pécces, &c.

Págar, to pay.
Preterperfect definite.
paguéi I paid

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

págue élle, paguêmos nós, páguem élles, let him pay, &c.

Present subjunctive.

que êu págue, págues, págue paguêmos, pagueis, páguem, that I may pay, &c.—and not page, pages, &c.

The other tenses are conjugated like amár.

## Regular verbs in ar.

Abafár to choke, or to smother
Abalár to shake
Abanár to fan
Abastár to satiate
Abaxár to bring or let down
Abençoár to bless.
Abocanhár to carp
Abominár to abominate
Abotoár to button
Acabár to finish
Admoestár to admonish
Affrontár to abuse

Agarrár to lay hold of Alagár to overflow Amaldiçoár to curse. Annulár to annul, or to make void.
Apressár to press or hasten Aquentár to warm Argumentár to argue Assoprár to blow Atár to tie Avassalár to subdue, to conquer. Azedár to sour

## Of the Verbs Passivc.

Before we proceed to the second conjugation, it is necessary to know that the Verbs passive, which express the suffering of an action, are nothing more than the participles of verbs active, conjugated with the verb  $s \ell r$ , to be.

#### EXAMPLE.

### Present tense.

éu sôu amádo
tu és amádo
élle hé amádo
nôs sômos amádos
vós sôis amádos
élles saõ amádos
I am loved
he is loved
we are loved
you are loved
élles saõ amádos
they are loved

and so throughout the other moods and tenses.

Second Conjugation of the verbs in êr.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

véndoI sellvêndesthou sellestvêndehe sellsvendémoswe sellvendéisyou sellvêndemthey sell

### Preterimperfect.

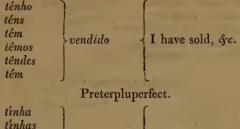
vendía I did sell
vendías thou didst sell
vendía he did sell
vendíamos we did sell
vendíeis you did sell
vendíaõ they did sell

### Preterperfect definite.

vendí I sold
vendéste thou soldest
vendéo he sold

vendémos we sold vendéstes you sold vendéraő they sold

### Preterperfect.



tinha
tinha
tinha
tinha
tinhamos
tinheis
tinhaõ

This tense may also be conjugated thus: vendêra, vendêras, vendêra, vendêramos, vendêreis, vendêraõ.

### Future.

venderéi venderás venderá venderémos venderéis venderáő

### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vénde tusell thouvénda éllelet him sellvendâmos nóslet us sellvendéi vóssell yevéndaő élleslet them sell

### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

que êu vênda vêndas vênda vendâmos vendáis vêndaõ

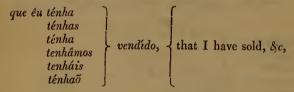
### Preterimperfect.

que êu vendêra or vendêsse that I might or could sell, vendêras or vendêsses, &c. vendêra or vendêsse vendêramos or vendêssemos vendêreis, or vendêsseis vendêraō or vendêssem

### Second Preterimperfect.

vendería I should sell, &c.
vendería
vendería
venderíamos
venderíeis
venderíaõ

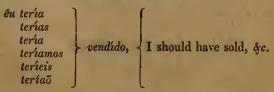
### Preterperfect.



### Preterpluperfect.

se éu tivéra or tivésse
tivéras or tivésses
tivéra or tivésse
tivéramos or tivéssemos
tivéreis or tivésseis
tivéraõ or tivéssem

### Second Preterpluperfect.



Future.

quândo êu vendêr

when I shall sell, &c.

vendêres vendêr vendêrmos vendêrdes

vendêrdes vendêrem

Second Future.

quando êu tivêr tivêre

tivéres tivér tivérmos tivérdes

tivérem

≻ vendído

vendido when I shall have sold, &c.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

vendêr to sell

Preterperfect.

ter vendido to have sold

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

que vênde that sell, that sells

Preterite.

vendido, masc. vendida, fem. Plur. vendidos, vendidas, sold.

Future.

que ha de vendêr that is to sell

GERUNDS.

vendêndo selling têndo vendîdo having sold

SUPINE.

para vendêr to sell

After the same manner as the verb vendér, are conjugated all the other regular verbs of the second conjugation ending in er: as the following:

Acometêr, to attack
Bebêr, to drink
Comêr, to eat
Comprehendêr, to perceive, or
apprehend
Cometêr, to commit
Concedêr, to grant
Corrêr, to run
Devêr, to owe

Escondêr, to hide Emprendêr, to undertake Metêr, to put in Offendêr, to offend Prometêr, to promise Respondêr, to answer Reprehendêr, to reprove Temêr, to fear Varrêr, to sweep, &c.

Third Conjugation, of the Verbs ending in ir.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

admitto I admit, &c. admittimos admittes admitte admitte

### Preterimperfect.

admittía I did admit, &c. admittíamos admittías admittíeis admittía admittíaõ

### Preterperfect definite.

admitt's I admitted. admitt's admitt's tes admitt's admit

### Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle admittido, and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb, têr.

ténho admittído, téns admittído, &c. I have admitted. thou hast, &c.

### Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle admittido, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb têr.

tínha admittído, &c. tínhas admittído, &c.

I had admitted thou hadst, &c.

It may also be conjugated thus; admittira, admittiras, admittira, admittiramos, admittireis, admittiraõ.

#### Future.

admittiréi admittirás admittirá admittirémos admittiréis admittiráõ I shall or will admit

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

admítte tú admítta élle admittâmos nós admittí vós admittaő élles admit thou let him admit let us admit admit ye let them admit

that I might admit, &c.

#### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

# Present. that I may admit, &c.

que éu admítta admíttas admítta admittâmos admittáis admíttaö

First Preterimperfect.

que êu admittira or admittisse admittiras or admittisses admittira or admittisse admittiramos or admittissemos admittireis or admittisseis admittiraõ or admittissem

Second Preterimperfect.

I should or would admit, &c.

admittiria admittirias admittira admittiriamos admititrieis admittiriaõ

Preterperfect.

Composed of the participle, admittido, and the present subjunctive of the verb têr.

que êu ténha admittido that I have admitted ténhas admittido, &c. thou hast admitted, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb têr and the participle admittido.

se éu tivéra admittído If I had admitted tivéras, &c. If I had admitted, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *tér* and the participle *admittido*.

êu tería admittido terías, &c.

I should have admitted thou shouldst, &c.

First Future.

se éu admittír admittíres admittír admittírmos admittírdes admittírem If I shall admit, &c.

Second Future.

It is composed of the first future subjunctive of the verb  $t\hat{e}r$  and the participle admittido.

se êu tivér admittido tivéres, &c. If I shall have admitted thou shalt, &c.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

admittir to admit

Preterperfect.

têr admittido to have admitted

PARTICIPLES.

Present.

admittido, for the masc. admittida, for the fem. admitted
Future.

que há de admittir that is to admit GERUNDS.

admittíndo admitting tênho admittído having admitted

SUPINES.

para admittir to admit

Conjugate after the same manner the following verbs:

Abrir, to open Conduzir, to conduce Introduzir, to introduce Induzir, to induce Produzir, to produce Luzir, to shine
Nutrir, to nourish
Reduzir, to reduce, to bring to
Traduzir, to translate
Deduzir, to deduct, &c.

## Of the Irregular Verbs in ar.

There are in each conjugation some verbs which do not conform to the common rule, and on that

account are called irregulars.

There are but two of the first conjugation, which in some of their tenses depart from the rule of the verb amár, viz. estar and dár. We have already conjugated the first, and the second is conjugated in the following manner.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

$d\hat{o}u$	I give	dâmos	we give
dás		$dcute{a}is$	you give
dá	he gives	$da ilde{o}$	they give

### Preterimperfect.

dáva dávas, &c. (as in regular verbs of the first conjugation)

### Preterperfect definite.

déi	I gave	démos	we gave
déste	thou gavest	déstes	you gave
dêu	he gave	déraõ	they gave

### Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle dádo and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb têr; as ténho dádo, &c. I have given, &c.

### Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle dádo and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb têr; as éu tínha dádo, &c. I had given, &c.

#### Future.

daréi I shall or will give, &c. (as in the verb amár) darás, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

dá tu, give thou dê êlle, let him give dêmos nós, let us give dái vós, give thou dém êlles, let them give

#### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

#### Present.

que êu dê that I may give, &c.

dê dêmos dêis dêm

### Preterimperfect.

que êu déra or désse that I might give, &c.
déras, or désses
déra or désse
déramos or déssemos
dereis or désseis
déraő or déssem

### Second Imperfect.

daría I should give, &c. daríamos darías daríais daríañ

The preterperfect, preterpluperfect, and the second preterpluperfect, are composed of the participle  $d\dot{a}do$ , and the auxiliary verb  $t\dot{e}r$ , as in the regular verbs.

### Future.

quândo êu dér when I shall give, &c.

déres

dér

dérmos dérdes dérem

### Second Future.

Is composed of the participle dádo, &c. as the regular verbs.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

dár, to give, &c. as in the regular verbs.

Of the Irregular Verbs in er.

I begin with fazér, podér, and sabér, because they occur oftenest in discourse.

Fazér to do or make.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

fáço I do fázes thou dost fázes thou dost fáze he does fázem they do

### Imperfect.

fazía, I did or did make, &c. fazíamos fazías fazía fazíañ Preterperfect definite.

fiz I made, &c. fizémos fizéste fize fizerao

Preterperfect.

ténho féito I had done, &c. téns feito, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

tínha féito I had done, &c. tínhas féito, &c.

### Future.

faréi I shall do, &c. (according to the regular verb.) farás, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

fáze tu do thou fázei vós do you fáça élle let him do fáça ő élles let them do

#### OPTATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

que éu fáça that I may do, &c. (according to the regufáças lar verbs.)

### Preterimperfect.

que êu fizéra or fizésse that I might do, &c.
fizéras or fizésses
fizéra or fizésse
fizéramos or fizéssemos
fizéreis or fizésseis
fizérao or fizéssem

### Second Imperfect.

faría I should do, &c. faríamos farías faría faríañ faría

#### Future.

quândo éu fizér when I shall do, &c.
fizéres
fizér
fizérmos
fizérdes
fizérem

### Second Future.

quândo êu tivér fetto when I shall have done tivéres fetto, &c.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

fazêr, to do.

GERUNDS.

fazendo doing or in doing.

#### PARTICIPLE.

feito made or done.

After the same manner are conjugated desfazér, to undo; contrafazér, to counterfeit; refazér, to make again.

Podér

to be able.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

I can or am able pósso pódes thou canst póde he can

podêmos we can podêis you can pódem they can

Imperfect.

podía I could or was able, &c. podías, &c.

### Preterperfect definite.

púde I could pudéste theu couldst pôde, he could

pudémos we could you could pudéstes pudéraõ they could

### Preterperfect.

ténho podído, &c. I have been able, &c.

Future.

poderéi I shall be able, &c. poderás, &c.

## There is no Imperative.

### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

### Present.

que êu póssa póssas. póssa possâmos

> possáis póssaõ

that I may be able thou mayest be able, &c.

Imperfect.

que êu pudéra or pudésse that I might be able pudéra or pudésse pudéramos or pudéssemos pudéreis or pudésseis pudéraő or pudéssem

pudéras or pudésses thou mightest be able, &c.

Second Imperfect.

podería I should be able, &c. poderías, &c.

Future.

quândo êu pudér pudéres when I shall be able, &c.

pudéres pudér pudérmos pudérdes pudérem

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

podêr to be able.

GERUNDS.

podéndo being able

pudído, been able

Sabêr, to know.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

séi I know sábes thou knowest sábe he knows

sabémos we know sabéis you know sábem they know

Imperfect.

sabia I did know

sabías thou didst know, &c. sabía, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

sôube I knew, &c. soubéste sôube

soubémos soubéstes soubéraõ

Preterperfect.

ténho sabido I have known, &c.

Future.

saberéi saberás, &c. I shall or will know, &c. (according to the regular verbs.

that I may know

thou mayest know, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sábe tu saíba êlle

know thou let him know saibâmos nós let us know sabéi vós know you saíbão élles let them know

#### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

Present.

que êu sáiba sáibas

sáibas sáiba

saibâmos saibáis saibaõ

Imperfect.

que éu soubéra or soubésse that I might know, &c. soubéra or soubésses soubéra or soubésse

soubéramos or soubéssemos soubéreis or soubésseis soubéraõ or soubéssem

Second Imperfect.

sabería I should know, &c. saberías sabería

saberíamos saberíeis saberíaõ

Future.

quando eu soubér when I shall know, &c.

soubéres
soubér
soubérmos
soubérdes
soubérem

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

sabêr to know

GERUND.

sabêndo knowing

#### PARTICIPLE.

sabido (for the masc.) sabida (for the feminine) known

## Of the Irregular Verb trazer, to bring.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

trágo I bring truzêmos we bring, &c. trázes thou bringest trazeis trázem

### Imperfect.

trazía, I did bring trazías, &c. thou didst bring, &c. (according to the regulars)

### Preterperfect definite.

trôuxe I brought trouxémos trouxéste thou broughtest, &c. trouxéstes trôuxe trouxéraõ

### Preterperfect.

ténho trazído I have brought, &c. tens trazído, &c.

### Future.

traréi I shall or will bring, &c. trarémos trarás trará traráo

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

tráze tu bring thou trazéi vós bring you trága élle let him bring trágaő élles, let them bring

#### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

#### Present.

que êu trága that I may bring, &c.
trága
tragâmos
tragáis
trága

### Imperfect.

que êu trouxéra or trouxésse

that I may bring, &c.

trouxéras or trouxésses

trouxéra or trouxésse trouxéramos or trouxéssemos

trouxéreis or trouxésseis trouxérao or trouxéssem

Second Imperfect.

êu traria I si trarias traria

I should bring, &c. trarianos trarieis trariaõ

#### Future.

quândo êu trouxér

when I shall bring, &c.

trouxéres trouxér trouxérmos trouxérdes trouxérem

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

trazêr to bring

GERUND.

trazêndo bringing

PARTICIPLE.

trazido masc. trazida fem. brought

Conjugation of the Irregular Verb vêr, to see.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

véjo I see vés thou seest vêmos •vêdes vém

Imperfect.

vía I did see, &c.

he sees, &c.

vias

nê

vía &c.

### Preterperfect definite.

ri I saw &c. vimos viste vistes vio víraõ

### Preterperfect.

I have seen, &c. ténho visto téns visto &c.

Future.

I shall see, &c. veréi verás, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

see thou vê tu véja êlle let him see vejâmos nós let us see vêde vós see you véjaõ êlles let them see him

#### OPTATIVE MOOD.

que êu véja that I may see, &c. vejâmos vejáis véjas véja véjaõ

### Imperfect.

que êu vira or visse that I might see, &c. viras or visses vira or visse víramos or vissemos vireis or vīseis vírao or víssem

### Second Imperfect.

eu vería I should see, &c. veríamos verías veríes vería veríaõ

Future.

quândo êu vir when I shall see, &c. víres vír

vírmos virdes virem

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

nêr

to see

GERUND.

vêndo

seeing

#### PARTICIPAE.

visto, vista

In like manner are conjugated the compounds

antevér, prevér, and revér.

The verb prover, when it signifies to provide for, or, to take care of, is conjugated in the present indicative thus:

> êu provénho, I take care of, &c. provéns

provém

provê

diz

provimos provindes provém

But when it signifies to make provision, it is conjugated thus:

> êu provêjo, I make provision, &c. provês

provêmos provéis próvem

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb dizer, to say.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

digo, I say, &c. dizes

dizémos dizéis dizem

Preterimperfect.

dizía, I did say, &c.

dizías, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

disse, I said, &c. disséste

dissémos disséstes

disse

disséraő

Preterperfect.

ténho ditto, I have said, &c. téns ditto, &c.

Future.

diréi I shall or will say, &c. dirás, &c.

### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

díze tu diga élle digâmos nós dizéi vós digaō élles let him say let us say say you let them say

#### OPTATIVE MOOD.

que êu diga digas, &c. that I may say, &c.

### Imperfect.

que éu disséra or dissésse that I might say, &c.
disséras or dissésses
disséra or dissésse
disséramos or disséssemos
disséreis or dissésseis
disséraő or disséssem

Second Imperfect.

diria I should say, &c.

### Future.

quándo êu dissér disséres dissér, &c. when shall I say, &c.

### INFINITIVE MOOD.

dizêr to say

GERUND.

dizéndo saying

ditto, ditta said

Observe, that the compounds desdizér, to unsay, and contradizér, to contradict, are in all points conjugated like dizér.

Conjugation of the Irregular Verb, querer, to be willing.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

quéres quéres quér querêmos queréis quérem I will, or am willing thou art willing he is willing, &c.

Imperfect.

quería, &c.

I was willing, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

I have been willing, &c.

quiz quizéste quíz quizémos quizéstes quizéraõ

Future.

quereréi quererás, &c.

I shall be willing, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

queiras tu queira elle queirâmos nós queiráis vós queiraõ elles be thou willing let him be willing let us be willing be you willing let them be willing

### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

que êu quéira quéiras, &c.

that I may be willing, &c.

### Imperfect.

que êu quizéra or quizésse that I we quizéras or quizésses thou quizéra or quizésse he ve quizéramos or quizéssemos we ve quizéreis or quizésseis you quizérao or quizéssem they

that I were willing
thou wert willing
he were willing
we were willing
you were willing
they were willing

### Second Imperfect.

êu querería I should or would be willing, &c. quererías, &c.

### Future.

quândo êu quizér when I shall be willing, &c. quizéres, &c.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

querêr to be willing

querêndo being willing

### PARTICIPLE.

querido been willing

Quér is sometimes a conjunction, when repeated in a sentence, and when it is rendered into English by whether and or; as, quér vós o tenháis feíto, quér não, whether you have done that or no. But when it is not repeated, and is joined to the particle se, it is sometimes rendered into English by at least; as, hum se quér, one at least; and sometimes by however, when joined to the particle que; as cômo quér que séja, however it be. In all which cases, it is not to be confounded with the third person singular of the indicative of the verb querér.

The verb querér is sometimes used with the particle se instead of the verb devér; as, as cousas não se querem feitas à pressa, things must not be

done in a hurry.

## Of the Irregular Vérb valer, to be worth.

I shall give no other tenses of this verb than the present indicative, the imperative, and the present of the subjunctive, none but these being irregular.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

válho
váles
vále or val
valèmos
valėis
válem

I am worth, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vále tu válha êlle valhâmos nós valéi vós válhaő êlles be thou worth let him be worth let us be worth be you worth let-them be worth

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

que éu válha válhas válha valhámos valháis válhaõ

___

that I may be worth, &c.

## Of the Irregular Verb perdêr, to lose.

This verb changes the c before o of the present indicative into d in the other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses and moods, except the imperative and present subjunctive. It is conjugated in the following manner:

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

pérco, pérdes pérde, I lose, &c.

perdêmos perdéis

perdem

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

pérde tu
pérca élle
percâmos nós
perdéi vós
pércaő élles

lose thou let him lose let us lose lose you let them lose

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

que êu pérca pércas pérca, &c. that I might lose, &c.

The compounds of the verb têr, as, contênho, I contain; detênho, I detain, &c. are conjugated in like manner.

Some verbs of this conjugation are only irregular in the participle passive; as escrito, from escrevêr;

absôlto, from absolvêr.

Those that have the j before o in the present indicative change the j into g in all tenses and persons, in which the j would otherwise meet with the vowels i or e; as, eleg'er, to elect; 'eu el'ejo, tu el'eges, &c. I elect, &c.

Imperfect.

Preter-def.

elegía, &c.

elegi elegêste, &c. I elected, &c.

The verbs ending in  $\ell yo$  in the present indicative, change that termination into  $\ell a$  in the imperfect, and into i in the preter-definite, and are so conjugated.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

êu lêyo I read, &c. lêmos lês lêdes lê

Imperfect.

êu l'a I did read, &c.

Preter definite.

êu li I read, &c. lêste, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

lê tu read thou lêde vos read you lêa êlle, let him read lêao êlles let them read

### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

que êu léa that I may read, &c. léas léa, &c.

You may observe that they lose the y through all the other moods and tenses. The verb  $cr\acute{e}r$ , to believe, is conjugated in the same manner.

## Of the Irregular Verbs in ir.

Ir, to go.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present tense.

vốuI govâmoswe govásthou goestidesyou gováihe goesvaõthey go

### Preterimperfect.

hía I did go, &c. híamos hías hía híao híao

### Preterperfect definite.

fii I went finos we went finos thou wentest finos we went finos vou went finos he went finos they went

### Preterperfect.

tênho têns, &c.  $\}$  ído  $\{$  I have gone, &c.

### Preterpluperfect.

tinha tinhas { ido } I had gone, &c.

Future.

iréi I shall or will go, &c. irás, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vái tu go thou ide vós go ye vá êlle let him go vaõ êlles let them go

#### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

que êu vá that I may go, &c.
vás
vá
vâmos
vádes
vaõ

### First Preterimperfect.

que êu fôra or fôsse that I might go, &c.
fôras or fôsses
fôra or fôsse
fôramos or fôssemos
fôreis or fôsseis
fôrao or fôssem

Second Preterimperfect.

iria I should go, &c.

irias, &c.

### Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle ido and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb têr.

### Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle 'ido and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb ter.

### Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle ido and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb ter.

#### Future.

quândo êu fôr fôres fôr when I shall go, &c.

för förmos fördes förem

Second Future.

quândo êu tivér tivéres, &c.

\{ ido \} when I shall have gone, \&c.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

ir to go

GERUND.

indo going

PARTICIPLE.

ido gone

Vir, to come.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

vénho I come, &c. véns

vém.

vímos víndes vém

Imperfect.

vinha I did come, &c. vinhamos vinhas vinheis

vínha vínhaõ

Preter definite.

vím I came, &c. viémos viéste viéstes véio viéraű, Preterimperfect.

ténho víndo I have come, &c. téns víndo, &c.

Future.

viréi virás, &c. I shall come, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vêm tu come thou vínde vôs come you vénha êlle let him come vénhaõ êlles let them come

#### OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present.
que éu vénha

Imperfect.
que éu viéra, or viésse
Second Imperfect.
viría, virías, &c.

### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

vir to come

GERUND.

vindo coming

PARTICIPLE. vindo come

The compounds of vir; as convir to be convenient; sobrevir, to come unlooked for, are conjugated in the same manner.

Of the Irregular Verbs, mentir, to lie, sentir, to feel; servir, to serve; ferir, to wound.

These verbs change the i of the first person singular of the present tense, indicative, into e in the

other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses and moods, except in the imperative and the present subjunctive. They are conjugated thus:

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

êu minto	tu mêntes	êlle mênte, &c.
êu sinto	tu sêntes	êlle sênte, &c.
êu sirvo	tu sérves	êlle sérve, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

mênte tu	mînta êlle	mintâmos nós	menti vés	mintaõ êlles
	sı́nta êlle			sı́ntaõ êlles
sérve tu	sirva êlle	sirvâmos nós	serví vós	sírvaő élles

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

minta	mintas, &c.
sınta	sintas, &c.
sírva	sírvas, &c.

The compounds, desmentir assentir, consentir, dissentir, presentir, are conjugated like mentir and sentir; and also the verbs afferir, referir, conferir, deferir, differir, inferir.

Of the Irregular Verbs affligir, to afflict; corrigir, to correct, fingir, to feign; ungir, to anoint; compungir, frigir, dirigir, tingir, cingir, &c.

These verbs change the g of the infinitive mood into j in those tenses where the g would otherwise meet with the vowel o, as in the first person singular of the present indicative afflijo; or a as in the third person of the imperative in both numbers, in the first plural of the same tense, and in the present subjunctive.

## Of the Irregular Verb seguir, to follow.

This verb changes the e of the infinitive mood into i in the first person singular of the present indi-

cative, éu sigo, I follow: in the present subjunctive que éu siga, that I may follow; and in the imperative where it is conjugated thus: ségue tu, siga élle,

sigamos nós, segui vos, sigaõ élles.

Observe that the u is lost in those tenses where it would otherwise meet with the vowels o and a, as you see in the examples; and this observation applies also to the verbs distinguir, to distinguish; extinguir, to extinguish, &c.

The compounds are perseguir, to persecute;

conseguir, to obtain; proseguir to pursue.

## Of the Irregular Verb ouvir, to hear.

This verb changes the v of the infinitive mood into c in the first person singular of the present indicative, eu ouco, I hear, eu ouves, &c. in the present subjunctive and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus: ouve eu, ouca elle, ouca elle, ouca elle, ouca elle, hear thou, &c.

## Of the Irregular Verb dormír, to sleep.

This verb changes the o of the infinitive mood into u in the first person singular of the present indicative, thus éu dúrmo tu dórmes, élle dórme, &c. I sleep, &c. In the present subjunctive, que éu dúrma, &c. that I may sleep; and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus; dorme tu, dúrma élle, durmâmos nós, dormí vós, dúrmaő élles, sleep thou, &c.

## Of the Irregular Verb fugir, to fly away.

This verb is irregular in the present indicative, and is thus conjugated: fújo, fóges, fóge, fugímos, fugís, fógem, I run away, &c. It is also irregular in the imperative mood where it is conjugated thus: fóge tu, fúja élle, fujûmos nós, fugí vós, fuju élles. Finally, it is irregular in the present subjunctive; que éu fúja, fújas, &c.

It keeps the u in all other tenses and moods, as also the g.

The verb *surgir*, to arrive, or to come to an anchor, has the same irregularity, and makes *súrto*, in

the participle passive.

The verbs, subir, cubrir, encubrir, descubrir, acudir, bullir, sumir, consumir, cuspir, construir, tossir &c. have the same irregularity in regard to the letter u.

## Of the Irregular Verb pedír to ask.

This verb is irregular in the first person singular of the present indicative and subjunctive, as well as in the imperative, in which it changes the d into  $\varsigma$ .

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

êu péço I ask, &c. nós pedimos tu pédes vós pedis élle péde élles pédem

### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

péde tu ask thou pedí vós ask you péça élle let him ask péçaő élles let them ask

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

que êu péca that I may ask, &c. peçâmos péças peçais péça péçao

In like manner is conjugated the verb *medir*, to measure: êu mêço, tu mêdes, &c.

Of the Irregular Verb vestir, to dress.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

êu visto I dress, &c. vestimos véstes vestis véste véstem

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

véste tu dress thou vesti vós dress you vísta élla let him dress vísta élles let them dress

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

que ĉu vista that I may dress, &c. vistâmos vistas vista vista

In all other tenses and moods it keeps the letter e; and in like manner is conjugated the verb despir

Of the Irregular Verb sortir, to furnish, or stock.

Feyjó says, that the o of this verb is to be changed into u in those tenses where the t is followed by e or a, and that it is to be kept when the t is followed by i; but in the Fábula dos Planétas we read, surtío efféyto, it took effect: and in Andrade, 2 part. Apologet. we read, não sortírão efféyto, where the verb sortírão is in the same tense, viz. in the preterperfect definite; therefore nothing can be determined about the irregularity of this verb.

## Of the Irregular Verb carpir, to weep.

This verb is defective, and is only used in those tenses and persons where the p is followed by i; as carpimos, carpis, we weep, you weep. Preterimperfect, carpia, carpias, &c. I did weep, &c.

Of the Irregular Verb parir, to bring forth young.

### INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

êu pairo I bring forth, &c. parimos pares paris pare Imperfect.

paría, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

pairâmos

páre tu bring thou forth, &c.

parí páiraő

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

que êu paira that I may say, &c.

pairâmos pairáis pairaõ

paíras paíra

Of the Irregular Verb repetir, to repeat.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

repito I repeat, &c.

repetímos repetís

repétes repéte

repétem

Imperfect.

repetia, repetias, &c. Preterperfect definite. repeti, repetiste, &c.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD.

repéte tu repeat thou, &c. repita élle

repitâmos, &c.

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

que êu repita that repitas, &c.

that I may repeat, &c.

Imperfect.

repetira, or repetisse that I might repeat.

Of the Irregular Verbs sahir, to go out, and cahir, to fall.

# INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

sáyo I go out, &c.

sahimos sahis

sanes

såhem

Preterimperfect. sahía, sahía, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

sahí, sahíste, &c.

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sahâmos nós sáhe tu sahí vós sáya élle sáyaő élles

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

que êu sáya, sáyas, &c.

This is the common way of writing the irregular tenses of the verb sahir as well as those of the verb cahir, viz. éu cáyo, tu cáhes, &c. I fall, &c. according to Feyjó,

Of the Irregular Verb, ordir, to warp in a loom.

Feyjo says that this verb changes the o into u in those persons where it would otherwise meet with the syllables da, de, do,

Of the Irregular Verb advertir, to warn.

Advertir is irregular in the following tenses, only by changing vir into ver.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

advirto I warn, &c. advertimos advertes advertes adverte advertem

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

advirtamos nós

ådvirte tu warn thou, &c. advertí vós
advirta elle advirtaő elles

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

que éu advirta that I may warn, &c. advirtâmos advirtas advirtais advirta advirtaõ Conjugation of the Irregular Verb pôr, to place.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

pônho I put, &c. pômos pôens pôem pôem

# Preterimperfect.

púnha I did put, &c. púnhamos púnhas púnhais púnha púnhaõ

# Preterperfect definite.

púz I put, &c. puzémos puzéste puzéstes pôz puzéraō

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb têr, and the participle pôsto.

# Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle  $p \hat{o} s t o$ , and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb  $t \hat{e} r$ .

#### Future.

poréi I shall or will put, &c. porémos porás poréis porá poráo

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

ponhâmos nós
pôem put thou, &c. pônde vós
pônha êlle pônhaō êlles

#### OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

#### Present.

que êu pônha that I may put, &c. tu pônhas, &c.

# First Preterimperfect.

que eu puzéra or puzésse that I might put, &c. tu puzéras, or puzésses, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

eu poría, I should put, &c. tu porías, &c.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle  $p\delta sto$ , and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb  $t\delta r$ .

Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle posto, and the first preterimperfect subjunctive, of the auxiliary verb  $t\acute{e}r$ .

Second Preterpluperfect.

Composed of the participle pôsto, and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb têr.

Future.

quândo éu pusér, when I shall put, &c. tu puséres, &c.

Second Future.

Composed of the participle  $p\delta sto$ , and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb  $t\ell r$ .

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

por to put GERUND.

pôndo, putting

pôsto put

After the same manner are conjugated the verbs derived from por; as  $comp\delta r$ , to compose;  $disp\delta r$  to dispose;  $prop\delta r$ , to propose, &c.

Some verbs are irregular only in the participle passive; as abérto, from abrir; escrito, from escre-

vêr, &c.

Of Verbs Neuter.

Verbs neuter are those which make a complete

sense of themselves, and do not govern any case after them, like the verb sactive; as dormír, to sleep; andár, to go; tremér, to tremble, &c. There are, however, some verbs neuter which may govern an accusative; as dormír hum sôno profúndo, to sleep soundly; éu fúi andándo méu camínho, e não disse húma palávra, I went my way, and said not a word. Verbs neuter may also be defined as those which, in their compound tenses, are seldom conjugated with the verb sér, to be; as, I sleep, I tremble, I speak, &c. We may indeed say, éu tênho dormído, I have slept; éu tênho tremído, I have trembled; but not, I am slept, &c. I said seldom, because sometimes verbs neuter may be conjugated with the verb sér; as, sér bem falládo, to have a good name.

It is necessary to be acquainted with the nature of a verb neuter, to avoid mistakes in the participle,

as may be seen in the Syntax of Participles.

# Of Reciprocal Verbs.

The term Reciprocal is given to such Verbs as return the action upon the agent, and are conjugated through all their tenses with the pronouns conjunctive me, te, se, &c.

#### EXAMPLE.

INDICATIVE

Present.

éu me arrepêndo tu te arrepêndes élle se arrepênde, &c. I repent, &c.

Imperfect.

êu me arrependia, I did repent, &c.

and so of the rest.

Yet, it is to be observed that the pronouns conjunctive me, te, &c. may be placed either before or after the verb, in the indicative, and consequently we may say, êu me lémbro, or éu lémbro-me, I re-

member; me lembréi, or lembréi-me, I remembered, &c. But in the imperative they should be placed after the verb, as in the following

#### EXAMPLE.

lêmbra-te tu remember thou, &c. lêmbre-se êlle

lembrêmo-nos nós lembrái-vos vós lêmbrem-se élles

In which example you will observe also, that the first person plural, which in the other verbs is like the first person plural of the present subjunctive, has the last consonant, s, cut off; and so from lembrémos we cut off the s to make lembrémo-nos; and from arrependâmos we make arrependâmo-nos, &c. gard to the infinitive, we may say, hé necessário arrependér-se dos peccádos, it is necessary to repent of sins; he necessário lembrár-se, it is necessary to remember; and not se arrependêr, or se lembrár. In like manner we may say, lembrando-me, remembering, and not me lembrando. But the present infinitive may be preceded by the particle pará (which forms the Portuguese supine), and then the pronoun conjunctive may be placed either before or after it; and we may say, para lembrár-se, or para se lembrár, to remember, or in order to remember.

In the subjunctive mood, you must put the pronoun conjunctive before the present; but you must carefully observe, that the pronouns conjunctive must be placed before it when preceded by the particles se, if, que, that; thus we may say, que éu me lembrásse, se éu me lembrásse, that I might remember, &c. but not que éu lembrásse me, &c. But when the first preterimperfect is not preceded by any particle, then you must place the pronoun conjunctive after it; as, arrependérame éu disso, I wish I repented it.

In the second preterimperfect we may place the pronouns conjunctive either before or after it, there-

fore you may say arrependería-me se, &c. or éu me

arrependería se, &c. I should repent if, &c.

In the future you must always place the pronouns conjunctive before it; thus, quândo éu me lembrár, when I shall remember: but not quândo éu lembrárme.

Note, all the verbs active may become reciprocals.

#### EXAMPLE.

êu me âmo I love myself tu te âmas thou lovest thyself êlle se âma he loves himself nós nos amâmos we love ourselves, &c.

Conjugation of the Reciprocal Verb ir-se, to go away.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

#### Present.

éu me vôu I go away tu te vás, &c. thou goest away, &c.

Preterimperfect.

êu me hía I did go away tu te hías, &c. thou didst go away, &c.

# Preterperfect definite.

êu me fûi, I went away tu te fôste, &c. thou wentest away, &c.

# Preterperfect.

êu me ténho ido I am gone away, or I have gone away. tu te téns ido, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

# Preterpluperfect.

êu me tínha ído I was gone away, or I had gone away. tu te tínhas ído, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

### Future.

êu me iréi, &c. I shall or will go away tu te irás, &c. thou shalt go away

#### IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vái-te, go thou away vá-se let him go away vâmo-nos let us go away

ide-vos go away, get away, or get you gone

vâo-se let them go away

#### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

que êu me vá that I may go away que tu te vás, &c. that thou mayest go away, &c.

First Preterimperfect.

êu me fôra, or me fôsse I went away te fôras, or te fôsses, &c. I went away, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

êu me iría tu te irías I would, &c. go away thou wouldst, &c.

Preterperfect.

que êu me ténha ido

that I have gone away, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

que êu me tivéra, or me tivésse ido that I had gone away

Second Preterpluperfect.

êu me teria ido I should have gone away, &c.

Future.

quândo êu me fôr when I shall go away, &c.

Second Future.

quândo êu me tivêr ido when I shall have gone away, &c.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

ir-se to go away

Preterperfect.

têr-se ido, to have gone away

PARTICIPLES.

Present.

que se vá that is gone away

Preterit.

ido gone away

Future.

que há de ír-se that is to go, away

GERUNDS.

indo-se going away têndo-se ido having gone away

SUPINE.

para ir-se to go, or in order to go away

Observe, that in the compound tenses the pronouns me, te, &c. are placed before the auxi-

liary verb.

2dly. This verb is also used in speaking of vessels to signify their being leaky; as vái-se a cúba, the tub leaks. It is also used before the gerunds; as, o invérno vái-se acabândo, the winter is drawing towards an end; élles vaō-se preparândo, they are preparing themselves: in which examples and in the like, the verb is to be rendered into English by the verb to be itself, and without addition of the adverb away; and sometimes it is placed before the present infinitive; as, ir-se deitár, to go to bed.

Of the Reciprocal Verb vir-se, to come away.

This verb is to be conjugated like the verb vir; but you must place the pronouns conjunctive me, te, &c. according to the observations made above.

Of the Reciprocal Verb avir-se, to agree.

This is a compound verb, which is to be conjugated by putting the particle a before the verb vir in all its tenses and moods; attending to

the observations already made concerning the pronouns conjunctive; and also in regard to the reciprocal verb *havér-se*, to behave; in the conjugation of which, no more is necessary than to add the pronouns conjunctive to the verb *havér*.

# Impersonal Verbs.

There are three sorts of verbs impersonal, which have only the third person singular.

The first are properly impersonals of themselves;

as,

succéde it happens

básta it is enough, or it suffices

chóve it rains trovéja it thunders

The second are derived from verbs active, followed by the particle se, which renders them impersonal; as, âma-se, they love; dîz-se, they say; nôta-se, it is noted. They are also called passive impersonals.

The third, which have a great affinity with reciprocal verbs, are conjugated with the pronouns conjunctive, me, te, lhe, nos, vos, lhes; as doe me

dóe te, dóe lhe, &c.

# The Impersonal Verbs of themselves are,

convém, it is convenient succéde, it happens, or it falls out está-me bem, it becomes me básta, it is enough há-se, it is necessary chovísca, it misles chóve, or cáhe pédra, it hails géa it freezes néva, it snows fuzíla, or relampaguéa, it lightens impórta, it matters, it concerns paréce, it seems

and the like, which are conjugated with the third persons singular of each tense; as,

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

chóve it rains

Imperfect.

chovía it did rain

Preterperfect definite.

chovéo it rained

Preterperfect.

tem chovido it has rained

Preterpluperfect.

tinha chovido it had rained

Future.

choverá it shall or will rain

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

chôva let it rain

# OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS,

Present.

que chôva that it may rain

Imperfect.

que chovêra, or chovêsse that it might rain

Second Imperfect.

chovería it should rain

Future.

quândo chovêr when it shall rain

Second Future.

quândo tivér chovido when it shall have rained

INFINITIVE MOOD.

chovêr to rain

The particle se which composes the scond sort of impersonal verbs, may be placed either before or after them; as, diz-se, they say; sábe-se, it is known; sabia-se, it was known: lógo se sóube, it was immediately known; se díz, it is said, &c. but sometimes they make no use of the particle se, and only put the verb in the third person plural; as, dízem, instead of se díz, they say.

In like manner all the verbs active may become

impersonal.

In regard to these verbs, observe, that when the noun that follows them is in the singular number, you must put the verb in the singular; if the noun be in the plural, you must put the verb in the plural.

#### EXAMPLE.

Lôuva-se o capitaõ, they praise the captain. Lôuvaõ-se os capitaës, they praise the captains. Vê-se hum hômem, they see a man. Vêm-se hômens, they see men.

When *lhe* is used after the word *se*, then *lhe* is to be rendered into English by *his* or *her*; as, *lôuva-se-lhe o valôr*, they praise his *or* her courage.

The third sort of impersonal verbs are such as are conjugated with the pronouns personal, me, te, lhe, &c. with the third person singular.

#### EXAMPLE.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

# Present.

desagráda-me deságrada-te desagráda-lhe desagráda-nos desagráda-vos deságrada-lhes I am displeased, or it displeases me thou art displeased he or she is displeased we are displeased you are displeased they are displeased

# Imperfect.

desagradáva-me I was displeased

Preterperfect definite.

desagradou-me I was displeased

Future.

desagradár-me-há I shall be displeased

OPTATIVE MOOD.

que me desagrade that I may be displeased

Imperfect.

que me desagradára or me desagradásse that I were displeased

Second Imperfect.

desagradár-me-hía I should be displeased

Conjugate after the same manner,

succéde-me, it happens to me dóe-me, it grieves or it pains me paréce-me, it seems to me hé-me preciso, it behoves me agráda-me, it pleases me lêmbro-me, I remember

Many of these impersonal verbs have the third person singular and plural; as,

dóe me a pérna, my leg pains me dóem me os ólhos, I have sore eyes

o vósso vestido paréce-me nôvo, your coat appears new to me

os vóssos sapátos me parécem múito compridos, your shoes seem to me too long

Of the Verb ser, to be.

The verb sér is also used as an impersonal, as will be seen in the following examples: hé têmpo de levantár-se, it is time to get up; éra têmpo de hír, it was time to go, &c. and particularly when it is conjugated with the adjectives preciso or necessário; as, he preciso or necessário fazér isto, this must be done; éra preciso or necessário escrevér, it was necessary to write; éu iría, se fôsse preciso, I would go, if it

should be necessary; hé preciso que éu vá, I must go; hé preciso que éu léya, I must read; hé preciso que êlle côma, he must eat; sería preciso que êu fôsse, I should go. You see by the last examples, that when the verb ser and the adjective are before the conjunctive mood, with the participle que, the conjunctive is rendered in English by the infinitive; but if the verb ser is followed by the relative or particle que, it must then be rendered in English in the following manner; as, êu hé que ténho feito aquillo, 'tis I who have done that; tu hé que téns, &c. 'tis thou who hast, &c. élle hé que tem, &c. 'tis he who, &c. nós hé que têmos, &c. 'tis we who have, &c. vós hé que têndes, &c. 'tis you who have, &c. élles hé que tém, &c. 'tis they who have, &c. a lêy hé que o mânda, 'tis the law that prescribes it; élla hé que o cré, 'tis she who believes it; élles hé que o fizérao? is it they have done it? êu hê que o fîz, 'twas I who did it; então hé que éu tômo as mínhas medidas, 'tis then I take my measures; entao hé que éu vi, 'twas then I saw, or only then I saw. You may observe that que is not relative in the last examples, and that it is left out in English.

Of the Verb haver, when it is impersonal.

It is to be thus conjugated.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

há, or nao há there is, or there is not, or there are, or there are not

Imperfect.

havia there was, or there were

Preterperfect definite.

hôuve there was or there were

Preterperfect.

tem havido there has been, or there have been

Preterpluperfect.

tínha havído there had been

Future.

haverá there shall be

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

hája let there be

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

que hája that there may be

Imperfect.

que houvéra or houvésse that there were

Second Imperfect.

haveria there would be

Preterperfect.

que ténha havido if there had been

Preterpluperfect.

se tivésse havido if there had been

Future.

quândo houvér when there will or shall be

Second Future.

quândo tivér havido when there shall have been

INFINITIVE MOOD.

havêr there to be

Preterit.

têr havido there to have been

GERUNDS.

havêndo there being têndo havîdo in there having been

Those who learn Portuguese are greatly at a loss how to render the following expressions, there is not;

is there? although there is nothing more easy. I have explained them at large in the following conjugation.

Conjugation of the Verb impersonal there is, há, when it marks the place, through all its tenses.

There is of it There is not of it Is there of it? Is there not of it? There was of it There was not of it Was there of it? Was there not of it? There was of it There was not of it Was there of it? Was there not of it? There shall be of it There shall not be of it Shall there be of it? Shall there not be of it? That there may be of it That there may not be of it That there were of it That there were not of it There would be of it There would not be of it Would there not be of it? If there had been of it If there had not been of it Had there been of it? Had there not been of it? There would have been of it There would not have been Would there have been of it? Would there not have been of it? When there will be of it

When there will not be of it

há la ďisso não há lá disso há lá disso ? nao há lá disso? havía lá dísso naõ havia lá desso havia lá disso? nao havía lá disso? hôuve lá dísso nao houve lá disso hôuve lá dísso? nao hôuve lá disso? haverá lá disso nao haverá lá disso haverá lá disso? nao haverá lá disso que hája la disso naõ hája lá disso \[disso que houvéra or houvésse lá nao houvéra or houvésse lá \[disso havería lá dísso naõ haveria lá disso nao havería lá disso? se tivésse havido lá disso se não tivésse havido lá disso tería havido lá disso? nao tería havido lá disso? tería havido lá disso naõ teria havido lá disso tería havido lá disso?

nao tería hávido lá disso?

quândo não houver lá disso

quândo houvér lá disso

When there will have been quando tivér havido lá disso

When there will not have been of it

Will there have been of it? Will there not have been too much of it?

For there having been too much of it

In there having been too little

quândo não tivér havido lá disso terá havído lá dísso? nao terá havído lá disso?

por tér havido lá demasiadamênte disso téndo havido lá múito pôuco

Most sentences beginning with the word some, and the verb to be, are expressed in Portuguese by the impersonal há; as, some friends are false, há amígos fálsos; some Christians are unworthy of that name, há Christãos que não são dignos de tal nôme.

Observe, that há comes before a substantive even

of the plural number.

The impersonal há is besides used to denote a quantity of time, space, and number; as, há déz annos que morréo, he has been dead these ten years; or, he died ten years ago; há trinta milhôens d'álmas em Frânça, there are thirty millions of souls in France; de Páris a Londres há 120 légoas, Paris is 120 leagues from London.

The question of space is asked thus, quanto ha de Paris a Londres? how far is Paris from London.

Of the impersonal Verb há-se, it is necessary, or must.

This verb answers to the Italian bisogna, and to the French il faut, and always requires after it the particle de, and the infinitive. It denotes the necessity of doing something, and is Englished by must, and sometimes by the verb to be, through all its tenses, with the words necessary, requisite, needful, &c. and as it denotes the necessity of doing something in general, without specifying who must, therefore the agent coming before must may be either I or we, he, or she, or any body, according to the subject of the sentence: as,

Há-se de fazér aquillo, one, or we, or you, or he,

or somebody must do that.

Há-se de hír, I or you, or we, or somebody must

Sometimes the verb coming after this impersonal, is Englished by the passive voice; as, há-se de fazêr isto, this must be done.

It is very often joined with mister; as, há-se de mister dinheiro para demándas, one must have money to go to law; há-se de mister hum bôm amígo para fazer fortúna no múndo, to push one's fortune in the world, one must have a good friend.

In the conjugation of this verb, you must use the verb to be with the word necessary, as I have

already said.

#### EXAMPLE.

Present, há-se, it is necessary. Imperfect, havia-se, it was necessary; and so through all the tenses and moods.

Sometimes the infinitive that follows the particle de is placed between this impersonal and its particle se; as, há-de achár-se, it will be found; and sometimes the infinitive precedes the impersonal, and this follows the particle se; as, achár-se-há, it will be found; in this case you must not join the particle de to it. Observe, that the infinitive may be also placed between the imperfect tense of this impersonal verb and its particle se; as, havía de achár-se, it was to be found; but when the infinitive precedes both the impersonal and its particle se, then you must put the particle se before the impersonal, and make use of the imperfect hía, and not havía; thus we must say, achár-se hía, and not achár-se havía.

Of the Defective Verbs carpir, to weep, and soer, to be wont.

The verb carpir is used only in those tenses and persons where the p is followed by an i; as, carpi-mos, carpis, we weep, you weep. Preterimp. carpia,

carpías, &c. I did weep, &c.

The verb soér is only used in the third persons of the present indicative of the preterimperfect of the same mood, and in the gerund; as, élle sóe, he is wont; élles sóem, they are wont. Imperf. élle soía, he was wont; élles soíaő, they were wont. Gerund, soéndo, being wont.

# CHAP. VI.

#### OF THE PARTICIPLES.

THE participle is a tense of the infinitive, which serves to form the preterperfects and preterpluperfects of all the verbs; as, tenho amádo, I have loved; tinha amádo, I had loved.

Amádo is a participle, and all the verbs in ar form

the participle in ádo; as, amádo, cantádo, &c.

Amádo is likewise a noun adjective. Example. Hômem amádo, molhér amáda; livros amádos, létras amádas.

Some participles are frequently abridged; as, envôlto, or envolvído, corrúpto, or corrompido, envúto or envugádo; and several others, which the use of authors will point to you.

The regular verbs ending in er or ir form the participle in ido; as, vendido, recebido, luzido, nu-

trido, &c.

There are three sorts of participles; namely, active, passive, and absolute.

The active participles are composed of the verb

têr; as, ténho amádo, tínha amádo, &c.

The passive participles are preceded by the verb

sêr, to be; as, sôu amádo, sêndo louvado, &c.

The passive participles are of the same nature as those called *absolute* in Latin; and you must observe, that *having* and *being* are often left out in Portuguese.

#### EXAMPLE.

Feito isto, having done this. Dito isto, having said so.

Acabáda a céa, after he or they have supped.

The auxiliary and participle are not always immediately joined together in compound tenses; as, Nós têmos, com a gráça de Déos, vencído os nóssos inimígos, we have, by the grace of God, overcome our enemies.

# CHAP. VII.

#### OF THE ADVERBS.

THE adverb is that which gives more or less force to the verb.

The adverb has the same effect with the verb as the adjective with the substantive: it explains the accidents and circumstances of the action of the verb.

There are a great many sorts; as, adverbs of time, place, quantity, &c.

Adverbs of time; as, at present, presentemente; now, agóra; yesterday, ôntem; to day, hôje; never,

núnca; always, sémpre; in the mean time, entretánto.

Adverbs of place; as, where, ônde; here, aqui; from whence, dônde; there, ali; from hence, daqui; above, em cima, below, em báxo; far, lônge; near, pérto.

Adverbs of quantity; as, how much, quânto, how many, quântos; or quântas; so much, tânto;

much, muito; little, pôuco.

A great many adverbs are formed from adjectives, changing o into amênte; sânto, santamênte, holily; ríco, ricamênte, richly; dôuto, doutamênte, learnedly.

From adjectives in e or l we likewise form adverbs,

by adding mente to them; as,

Constante, constantémente, constantly. Diligênte, diligentemente, diligently. Prudente, prudently.

Fiél, fielmênte, faithfully.

In order to assist the memory of those who are learning the Portuguese language, I have here collected a large number of adverbs, which, by frequent repetition, may be easily retained, especially those terminated in *ménte*.

#### A COLLECTION OF ADVERBS.

Abundantemênte, abundantly
Com razaõ, justamênte, justly
Absolutamênte, absolutely
A Escachapérnas, or a cavalleiro, a-straddle
Agóra, or por hóra, now at this time
Já, para já, now, immediately
Com condição, upon condition
De párte, aside
De travéz, askew, asquint;
as, olhár de travéz, to look askew, or asquint
Actualmênte, actually
De propósito, purposely

Adéos, farewell
Admiravelmênte
Maravilhosamênte
A's mîl maravîlhas
Astutamênte, cunningly
Atreiçoadamênte, treacherously
De maravîlha, very seldom
A miûdo, often
Assîm, so
Tao, so
A'préssa, in haste
Facilmênte, easily
A'o avêsso, or ás avéssas, the
wrong side outward

De improviso, or improvisamênte, unawares Antigamente, anciently Quási, pretty near, almost  $Ent \tilde{a} \tilde{o}$ , then Dêsde então, since that time Dêsde quândo? since when? De quândo ha? from what time? how long? De quândo em quândo, now and then, ever and anon Quândo bem, or aíndo quândo albeit, although it should Quândo muito, at the most Quândo mênos, at least Cá, here, or hither  $L\acute{a}$ , there Alí, there, in that place there expresses the Ahi, place where stands the person spoken to; as ahi ônde estás, there where you are Acolá, there Tráz, or detráz, behind Para tráz, backward I'sto hé, to wit  $Em\ v\hat{e}z$ , instead Também, also Tânto que Lógo que as soon as De pensádo, wilfully Acáso, by chance Fixamênte, stedfastly Finalmênte, finally Livremênte, freely Múito, much Depréssa, quickly Aqui, here Até agui, as far as here, or till now, or hitherto D'aqui, em diânte, henceforward, or hereafter Bem, well

A'manhāa, to-morrow A'manhāa pela manhāa, tomorrow morning Despôis d' a' manhāa, after to-morrow Ultimamente, lastly Cômo, as Cômo? how? Cêdo, soon Tárde, late Primêiro que, before that Priméiro que túdo, before all, or in the first place Fóra, abroad, out  $J\acute{a}$ , already De sálto, at one jump De quândo em quândo, from time to time A'ntes, before  $oldsymbol{Despôis}_{j}$  afterwards Juntamênte, together Enteiramênte, entirely A'o redór, or em tôrno, about De bálde, in vain Loucamênte, madly Muito, very Atrevidamênte, boldly Felicemênte, happily Vergonhósamente, shamefully *Núnca*, never Núnca mais, never since Lógo, immediately Ainda, yet; as, ainda naõ véio, he is not come yet Ainda, even; as, seria vergônha ainda o fallar nisso, it were a shame even to speak of it Nem se quér, even Vilmênte, basely Mal, ill Máis, more *Mênos*, less Até, until, or even Sim, yes

Naō, no, not
O'nde, where
De côr, by heart
A's vêzes, sometimes, from
time to time

Quândo, when Náda, nothing Verdadeiramente, truly Dêntro, within Devagár, softly

# CHAP. VIII.

#### OF THE PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS are a part of speech indeclinable, most commonly set before a noun, a pronoun, or verb.

Every preposition requires some case after it, as you will see in the following collection;

#### Genitive.

A'ntes do día, before day-break Diânte de Deos, before God Dêntro da igrêja within the church De tráz ao palácio, behind the palace Debáxo da mêsa, under the table Em címa da mêsa, upon the table Além, besides Além dos máres, on that side of the seas Além d'isso, besides that, moreover Além de que, idem Aquem, or dáquem dos máres, on this side of the seas Ao redór, or em contôrno da cidáde, round about the city Pérto de Lôndres, near London Acêrca da quêlle negócio, concerning that affair Fóra da cása, out of the house Fóra de perígo, out of danger Fóra de si, out of one's wits

This preposition governs also a nominative; as, fóra sêu irmáõ, except his brother, or his brother excepted.

De frônte de mínha cása, over-against my house. De frônte da igréja, facing the church Despôis de cêa, after supper

# Dative.

Quânto aquillo, with respect to that Pegádo á murálha, close to the wall

Desde o bico do pé até a cabeça, from top to toe

Accusative.

Perânte o juiz, before the judge.
E'ntre, between, among, or amongst
E'ntre os hómens, among men
Sôbre a mêsa, upon the table
Confórme, or segúndo a léy, according to the law
Por amôr de Dêos, for God's sake
Pelo múndo, through the world
Pela rúa, through the streets
Pelas térras, through the lands
Por grânde que séja, let it never be so great
Côntra êlles, against them
Tráz do têmplo, behind the temple
Durânte, during; as, durânte o invérno, during the winter

We shall be more particular about prepositions when we examine their construction.

# CHAP. IX.

### OF THE CONJUNCTIONS.

A CONJUGATION is an indeclinable part of speech which serves to join the members and parts of speech together, in shewing the dependency of relation and coherency between the words and sentences.

Some conjugations are copulative, which join, and, as it were, couple two terms together; as, e, and: Portuguéses e Ingléses, Portuguese and English.

Some are disjunctive, which shew separation or division; as, nem, nor, neither; ou, either, or. Example; nem êste, nem aquélle, neither this, nor that; ou éste, ou aquélle, either this or that; nem máis, nem mênos, neither more nor less; quer o fáça, quer nao, túdo para mim hé o mésmo, it is all one to me whether he does it, or no; quer séja verdáde, quér nao, whether it be true, or not; nem se quér hum, not even one.

The adversative denote restriction, or contrariety;

as, mas, or porém, but; comtúdo, yet, however; mas

ântes, or péllo contrário, nay.

The conjunctions conditional suppose a condition, and serve to restrain and limit what has just been said; as, se, if; com condiçám que, com isto que, dádo cáso que, provided that, or upon condition that, or in case that, &c.

The concessive, which shew the assent we give to a thing; as, embora, or séja embora, well and good;

está feito, done, agreed.

The causal shew the reason of something; as,

porqué, for, or because, or why.

The concluding denote a consequence drawn from what is before; as, logo or por consequência,

therefore, then, or consequently.

The transitive, which serve to pass from one sentence to another; as, além disso, moreover, or besides that; sóbre túdo, or em súmma, after all, upon the whole, in the main; a propósito, now I think of it, or now we are speaking of that.

There are others of a different sort; as, se quér, or ao ménos, at least; aindaque, although; de sórte que, so that; antes quéro pedir que furtar, I'll rather beg than steal; antes morreréi que dizér-volo, I'll

rather die than tell you; já que, since, &c.

To the above-mentioned parts of speech grammarians have added Interjections, which are particles serving to denote some passion or emotion of the mind; but there is another sort, which may be called demonstrative; as, aquí and lá; Ex. éste hómem aquí, this man; aquélla molhér lá, that woman, &c. and some others continuative, because they denote continuation in the speech; as, com effeito, in effect; álem dísso, besides; óra vejámos, now let us see; finalménte fómonos embóra, and so, sir, we went away. To which we may add those invented to imitate the sounds of dumb creatures, and the noise which is occasioned by the clashing of bodies against one another; as, sáz, tráz, thwick-thwack, &c.

Interjective Particles.

Of Joy.

Ha, ha, ha! Ha, ha, ha! Oh que gosto! Oh joy!

Of Grief.

Ay! Alas! ah! Ay de mim! Woe is me! lack! Méu Déos! My God!

Of Pain.

Ay! Ay! Oh!

To encourage.

A'nimo! O'ra vâmos! Come, come on!

To call.

O, olá, Ho, hey, hip!

Of admiration or surprise.

O, O lá, ahi! Lack-a-day! A'pre! Heyday!

Of aversion.

I'rra! Náda! Fóra! Away, away with, fye!

For making people go out of the way, or stand away. Guardem-se, or arrédem-se! Have a care, clear the way, or stand away!

For shouting.

Viva! Huzza!

Of silence.

Caláivos! Hush! Peace!

Of cursing and threatening.

Ai, guái! Woe!

For derision.

Ah! Ah! oh! oh! oh!

Of wishing.

Oprovéra a Déos! Would to God!

Oxalá! or hah! O that!

O se! Would!

The interjection O serves for different emotions of the mind, as admiration, grief, wish, &c. and sometimes is used ironically, but differently uttered, according to the emotion which it expresses.

Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese

Language.

Anto	António	Anthony
Sebam	Sebastiâm	Sebastian
Bmo Pe	Beatissimo Pádre	
Cap ^m	Capitaõ	Captain
Compa	Companhía	Company
Corro	Carrêio	Post
<b>D.</b>	Dom or Dona	Don or Dona
Dr, Dor	Doutôr	Doctor
$\mathbf{D}_{i}$	Déos	God
Do, Da	Ditto, ditta	Said
Ex ^{mo} , Ex ^m	Excellentíssimo, m	
V. E.	Vóssa excellência	
V. S.	Vóssa senhoria	
V. A.	Vóssa altêsa	Your Highness
V. M. or Vrace	Vóssa mercê	You
V. P.	Vóssa paternidáde	
V. Magde	Vóssa magestáde	Your Majesty
S.	Sânto	Saint
Franco	Francisco	Francis
$\mathbf{G}^{ ext{de}}$	Guárde	Save
J. H. S.	Jesús	Jesus
M ^s a ^s	Muitos ânnos	Many Years
$M^e$	Méstre	Master
Sor, Sca	Senhôr, ôra	Sir, Lady
$\mathbf{R}^{mo}$	Reverendíssimo	Most Reverend
$\mathbf{P}^{a}$	Para	For
Q°	Que	That
$\tilde{\mathbf{Q}}^{ ext{do}}$	Quândo	When
$\mathbf{Q}^{\mathrm{m}}$	Quem	Who
Q ^{to}	Quânto	How much
Suppte	Supplicânte	Petitioner
Gen ^{al}	Generál	General
Tent ^e	T'enênte	Lieutenant
V. G.	Vérbe grátia	For Example

And many others that must be learned by use.

# PORTUGUESE

# GRAMMAR.

# PART II.

# CHAP. I.

### OF THE DIVISION OF SYNTAX.

SYNTAX is a Greek word, by the Latins called construction; and it signifies the right placing and connecting of words in a sentence. It is divided into three sorts; the first, of Order or Arrangement; the second, of Concordance; the third of Government. The Syntax of Order or Arrangement, is the fit disposition of words in a sentence. The Syntax of Concordance, is when the parts of speech agree with one another, as the substantive with the adjective, or the nominative with the verb. The Syntax of Government, is when one part of speech governs another.

For the sake of those who, perhaps, have not a grammatical knowledge of their own language, I shall lay down some general rules of Portuguese construction.

# Of the Order of Words.

1. The nominative is that to which we attribute the action of the verb, and is generally ranged in the first place; it may be either a noun or pronoun, as, Francisco escréve, Francis writes; éufállo, I speak.

2. When the action of the verb is attributed to many persons or things, these all belong to the nominative, and are ranged in the first place, together with their conjunction; as, Pédro e Páulo lém, Peter and Paul read.

3. The adjectives belonging to the nominative substantive, to which the action of the verb is attributed, are put after the substantive, and before the verb; as, os estudântes morigerádos e diligêntes estúdão, the obedient and diligent scholars study.

4. If the nominative has an article, this article

always takes the first place.

5. Sometimes an infinitive is put for a noun, and stands for a nominative; as o dormir faz bem, sleeping does one good; and sometimes a verb with its case; as, he ácto de humanidáde ter compaixão dos afflictos, to have compassion on the afflicted is an act of humanity.

6. The nominative is sometimes understood; as,  $\acute{a}mo$ , where you understand  $\acute{e}u$ ; and so of the other

persons of the verb.

7. After the nominative you put the verb; and if there is an adverb, it is to be placed immediately after the verb, whose accident and circumstances it explains; as, Pédro áma pôr extrêmo a gloria, Peter

is extremely fond of glory.

8. The cases governed by the verb are put after it; they may be one, or many, according to the nature of the action; as, êu âmo a Pêdro, I love Peter. Fáço presênte de hum livro a Páulo, I make a present of a book to Paul.

9. The preposition is always put before the case

it governs; as, pérto de casa, near the house.

10. The relative is always placed after the antecedent; as, *Pédro o qual estúda*, Peter who studies.

# II. Of Concordance.

1. The adjectives agree with their substantives in gender, number, and case; as, hómem virtuóso, a virtuous man; bélla molhér, a handsome woman; sumptuósos palácios, &c. sumptuous palaces, &c.

2. When two or more substantives singular come together, the adjective belonging to them must be put in the plural; as, tânto el réy cômo a raínha montádos a cavállo parécem bem, both the king and

the queen look well when they ride.

- 3. If the substantives happen to be one in the singular and the other in the plural, or to be of different genders, the adjective common to both agrees in number and gender with the last; as, elle tinha os olhos e a boca aberta, or elle tinha a boca e os olhos abertos, his eyes and mouth were opened. As lagoas e rios estávao congeládos, the ponds and rivers were frozen.
- 4. But when there is one or many words between the last noun and the adjective, that adjective (common to all) agrees with the noun masculine, though the last noun be feminine; and if the nouns are in the singular, then the adjective common must be put in the plural number and masculine gender; as, o roc c a lagóa estávaô cogeládos; the pond and river were frozen. O trabálho, a indústria, e a fortúna unidos; pains, industry, and fortune joined together.

5. Every verb personal agrees with its nominative, expressed or understood, both in number and

person.

6. The relative qual with the article agrees entirely with the antecedent; but without the article

and denoting an absolute quality, it agrees with what follows; as, aquélle, coração o qual, &c. that heart which, &c. Considerándo quáes seríao as condiçõens, &c. considering which would be the conditions, &c.

7. The question and answer always agree in every thing; as, a que senhôra pertênce vm^{ce}? êlle respondêo, pertênço à raínha: To what lady do you belong, sir?

he answered, I belong to the queen.

# III. Of the Dependence of the Parts of Speech on one another.

1. The nominative being the basis of the sentence, the verb depends on it, as the other cases depend on the verb. The adjective depends on the substantive that supports it; and the adverb on the verb whose accidents it explains.

2. The genitive depends on a substantive, expressed or understood, by which it is governed.

3. The accusative depends either on a verb ac-

cusative, or on a preposition.

4. The ablative depends on a preposition by which it is governed; as, parto de Roma, I go from Rome.

5. The dative and vocative have, strictly speaking, no dependence on the other parts: the dative is common, as it were, to all nouns and verbs; the vocative only points out the person to whom you speak.

I now come to the Construction of the several

parts of speech.

# CHAP, II.

#### THE SYNTAX OF ARTICLES.

BEFORE we come to the syntax of the articles, remember that o, a, os, as, are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns, but not when

joined to the verbs.

Those who understand Latin will quickly perceive the difference, if they take notice that every time they render o, a, by illum, illum, illud; or by eum, eam, id; and os, as, by illos illas, illa; or by eos, eas, ea; they are relative pronouns.

1. The article is used before the names of the species or things which can be spoken of; therefore nouns of substances, arts, sciences, plays, metals, virtues, and vices, having no article before them in English, require the article in Portuguese; as,

O ôuro e a práta não pódem fazêr feliz ao hômem, gold and silver cannot make the happiness of man.

A virtude não hé compatível com o vieio, virtue

cannot agree with vice.

A philosophía he húma sciência múito nóbre, philosophy is a very noble science.

Joguémos as cârtas, let us play at cards.

- 2. The article is not placed before a substantive which is followed by the adjective of number that stands for a surname, or meet with a proper or Christian name; as, Joseph Primeiro, Joseph the First.
- 3. When a book or some part of it, as chapter, page, &c. is quoted, the adjective of number may come either before or after the substantive; but if it comes after, the two words are construed without the article; as, livro priméiro, capitulo segúndo, &c. book i. chapter ii. If the adjective of number

comes before the substantive, it takes the article;

as, o priméiro livro, the first book.

4. O placed before que signifies what or which; as, fáça o que quisér, let him do what he likes; o que éu fiz, which I did.

5. The article is never made use of before proper

names of men, women, gods, goddesses, saints.

6. The article is not used in Portuguese before the pronouns possessive relative; as, de quem he ésta cása? he mínha, hé túa, &c. whose house is this? it

is mine, it is thine, &c.

7. When a mount's, mountain's or hill's name, is preceded by the word monte, it takes neither article nor preposition; as, o Mônte Atlânte, Mount Atlas; os Móntes Pirenéos, the Pirenean Mountains; but after the word sérra, a ridge of hills, it takes the article; as, a Sérra da Estrélla, Mount-Strella; Sérra do Potósi, Mount Potosi; however, they say, also, Sérra Lióa.

8. The noun of the measure, weight, and the number of the things that have been bought, requires the articles; as, o trigo vênde-se a tânto o alqueire, wheat sold so much a peck, three quarts

and one pint.

A manteiga vénde-se a tánto o arrátel, butter cost so much a pound.

Os óvos véndem-se a tánto a dúzia, eggs are sold

so much a dozen.

9. No article is used with proper names of persons and planets, except a térra, the earth; a sól,

the sun; a lúa, the moon.

10. When proper names are used in a determinate sense, that is, when they are applied to particular objects, then they take the article; o Déos dos Christias, the God of Christians; o Archimédes de Inglatérra, the Archimedes of England. The proper names of renowned poets and painters keep also the article; as, o Camôcns, o Pope, o Tásso, o Ticiáno, &c.

11. The indefinite article de is used before nouns following one of this, sórte, espécié, género, and any other noun of which they express the kind, character, quality, and nature: which sort of nouns are usually Englished by an adjective, or even by the substantive itself placed adjectively, and making together, as it were, but a word compound; as, Dor de cabéça, the head ach; húma sórte de fruto, a sort of fruit; fallár de tôlo, a foolish speech.

Sometimes the English adjective may be made an adjective in Portuguese, as in the last example him fallar tolo, a foolish speech; but not unfrequently the Portuguese express the English adjective by a substantive of the same signification with de before the other noun, though they have an adjective of the same nature as the English adjective; as, o diábo de minha molhér, my devilish wife; and sometimes the adjective is used by them substantively, or the substantive is understood; as, o velháco de meu filho, my rascally son; a velháca de súa mãy, his or her rascally mother. Finally they also make use of the definite article; as, o diábo do hómem, or da molhér, the devilish man or woman; a póbre da molhér, the poor woman, &c.

12. Nouns are used without article in the fol-

lowing cases:

1st. At the title of a performance, and in the middle of sentences, where they characterise in a particular manner the person or thing spoken of, in which case the English use especially the particle a; as,

Discurso sóbre as obrigaçõens da religiao natural, a discourse concerning the obligations of natural

religion.

Priméira parte, the first part.

O Conde de Clermont, principe do Sángue, morrêo, &c. the count of Clermont, a prince of the blood, died, &c.

O Sto Antonio; náo de novênta péças, the St. Anthony; a ninety gun ship.

2ndly. In sentences of exclamation; as,

As máis béllas flóres são as que ménos dúrao; qualquér chúva as desmáia, o vénto as múrcha, o sól as queima, e acába de secár; sem fallár núma infinidáde de inséctos que as perséguem e deitao a perdér; naturál e verdadeira imágem da belléza das senhóras! the most beautiful flowers last but a very short time; the least rain tarnishes them, the wind withers them, the sun scorches them, and completes the drying of them; without mentioning an infinite number of insects that spoil and hurt them: a natural and true image of ladies' beauty!

3dly. When they meet with a noun of number in an indefinite sense; as, mil soldados de cavallo contra cem infântes, a thousand horse against an hundred

foot.

Ténho l'ido dôus poétas, I have read two poets, that is, any two out of all that ever existed.

But before a noun of number, in a definite sense,

it would take the article; as,

Ténho lido os dous poétas, I have read both poets; because this plainly indicates a definite two, of whom some mention has been made already.

Os cem infantes que combatérao contra os mil de cavállo, que, &c. the hundred foot that fought with

the thousand horse, that, &c.

4thly. After the verb sér, when it signifies to become, and after sér tomádo por, to be accounted; passár por, to pass for; as, élle será doutôr com o témpo, he will become a doctor in time; élle pássa por marinheíro, he passes for a sailor.

When the adjective is used substantively, it must

have the neuter article o before it:

O vêrde offênde mênos a vîsta que o vermêlho, green hurts the eye less than red.

There are also some adverbs preceded by the

neutral article o; as the following, o melhôr que éu pudér, the best I can; o mênos que fôr possível, the least possible.

Articles are repeated in Portuguese before as many nouns (requiring the article) as there are in

the sentence; as,

O buro, a práta, a saúde, as hônras, e os deleítes não pódem fazer feliz ao hômem que não tem sciencia nem virtúde, gold, silver, health, honours, and pleasures, cannot make a man happy without wisdom and virtue.

The article o is put before the word senhôr, sir, or

my lord; as,

O senhôr dúque, my lord duke; o senhôr presidênte, my lord the president; os senhôres, the gentlemen; dos senhôres, of the gentlemen.

The feminine article a must be prefixed to senhôra, my lady, or madam; as, a senhôra duquéza, or condéssa de, &c. my lady duchess, or countess of, &c.

The article is never used in Portuguese as it is in English, before máis, more, or mênos, less, in the following sentences: quânto máis vivêmos, tânto máis aprendémos, the longer we live, the more we learn; quânto máis hum hydrópico bébe, máis sêde tem, the more an hydropic drinks, the more thirsty he is; quânto máis hum hômem he póbre, quânto mênos cuidádos tem, the poorer people are, the less care they have, &c.

Sometimes the English particle to, before infinitives, is rendered in Portuguese by the article o; as, he fácil o dizêr, o vêr, &c. it is easy to say, to

see, &c.

In a word, the natural associators with articles are those common appellatives which denote the several genera and species of beings, or those words which, though indefinite, are yet capable, through the article, of becoming definite. Therefore Apollonius makes it part of the pronoun's definition, to refuse

coalescence with the article; and it would be absurd to say  $o \notin u$ , the I; or o tu, the thou; because nothing can make those pronouns more definite than

thev are.

N. B. When the adjective hum, huma, is used as an article in Portuguese, it respects our primary perception, and denotes individuals as unknown; but the articles, o a, respect our secondary perception, and denote individuals as known. To explain by an example: I see an object pass by, which I never saw till then; what do I say? All vai hum pobre com huma barba comprida, there goes a beggar with a long beard. The man departs, and returns a week after; what do I say then? All vai o pobre da barba comprida, there goes the beggar with the long beard.

### CHAP. III.

OF THE SYNTAX OF NOUNS; AND FIRST, OF THE SUBSTANTIVES.

WHEN two or more substantives come together, without a comma between them, they all govern each the next in the genitive, the first governing the second, the second the third in the same case, and so on (that is, the first is always followed by the preposition de, or by the article before the next noun); but that genitive can never come in Portuguese before the noun that governs it, as in Pnglish:

A philosophía de Newton, Newton's philosophy. As guardas do principe, the prince's guards.

A pórta de cása, the house-gate.

Eis aquí a cása ao companheiro do irmão de minha molhér, here is my wife's brother's partner's house.

When two substantives singular are the nominative of a verb, this must be put in the plural; as, mêu irmão e mêu pái estão no câmpo, my brother and my father are in the country.

If the nominative is a collective name, the verb is always put in the singular; as, tôda a cidáde

assistio, all the city was present.

#### OF THE SYNTAX OF ADJECTIVES.

Of adjectives, some are put before the noun, and some after; and others may be put indifferently, either before or after.

The pronouns adjective possessive, mêu, têu, sêu, &c. and adjectives of number, come before the substantive as in English. Ex. Mêu pái, my father; a sua cása, his house; dúas peçôas, two people; o primeiro hómem, the first man.

But when the adjective of number stands for a surname, or meets with a proper or Christian name, it comes after the substantive, without the article;

as, Joáő, V. John the fifth.

## These following Adjectives come after the Substantive.

1st. Verbal adjectives and participles; as, hum hómem divertído, a comical, a merry man; húma molhér estimáda, a woman esteemed.

2dly. Adjectives of names of nations; as, hum mathemático Ingléz, an English mathematician; hum alfaiáte Francéz, a French taylor; música Italiâna, Italian music.

3dly. Adjectives of colour; as, hum vestido négro, a black suit of clothes; hum capóte vermélho, a red cloak, &c.

4thly. Adjectives of figure; as, húma mésa redônda, a round table; hum cámpo triangulár, a triangular field, &c.

5thly. Adjectives expressing some physical or natural quality; such are quente, hot; frio, cold;

húmido, wet; corcovádo, hunch-backed, &c.

Most other adjectives are placed before or after the substantive; as, sânto, holy; verdadeiro, true, &c.

If the substantive has three or more adjectives belonging to it, they must absolutely be put after it with the enclitic e before the last, which must likewise be observed, even when there be but two adjectives; for the Portuguese don't say, húma desagradável enfadônha óbra, &c. but húma óbra desagradável e enfadônha, &c. a disagreeable, tedious work.

Of adjectives, some always require after them either a noun or verb, which they govern; as, digno de louvôr, praise-worthy; digno de sér amádo, worthy to be loved; capáz de ensinár, capable to teach; and these have always the particle de after them.

Some will be used absolutely without being ever attended by any noun or verb; as, prudênte, wise;

incurável, incurable, &c.

Others may be construed both with and without a noun, which they govern; élla he húma molhér insensível, she is a woman without any sensibility; élla he insensível ao amór, she is insensible, and a stranger to the passion of love.

The following adjectives, which require the preposition de before the next infinitive, govern the genitive case. Observe, that some of them require in English the preposition at or with before the next

noun.

Digno, worthy: as, elle he digno de louvor, he is worthy of praise. This adjective is sometimes followed by que; as digna que seu nôme fôsse, &c. her name deserved to be, &c.

Indígno, unworthy; as, indigno da estimação que fáço délle, unworthy of the esteem which I have for him.

Capáz, capable; incapáz, incapable; as, capáz, or incapáz de servír a própria pátria, capable or incapable of serving one's country.

Notádo, charged; as, notádo de avarêza, charged

with avarice.

Contênte, glad; as, estou contênte do successo que élle têve, I am glad or overjoyed at his success.

Cançádo, tired; as, cançádo de estudár, tired of

studying.

Dezejôso, greedy; as, dezejôso de glória, greedy of glory, &c. as likewise adjectives signifying fulness, emptiness, plenty, want, desire, knowledge, remem-

brance, ignorance, or forgetting.

All adjectives signifying inclination, advantage and disadvantage, profit or disprofit, pleasure or displeasure, due submission, resistance, likeness, govern the dative case; as, insensivel ás affrôntas, insensible of affronts; sér inclinádo a algúma côusa, to be inclined to something; nocivo á saúde, hurtful to health.

These adjectives signifying dimensions, as, álto, high, tall; lárgo, wide, broad; and comprido, long, come after words of the measure of magnitude, both in English and Portuguese; but they are preceded by de in Portuguese; as, dés pés de lárgo, ten feet broad; séis pés de comprido, six feet long, &c. they also turn the adjective of the dimension into its substantive, with the word of the measure before: but the word of the dimension is always preceded by de; as séis pés de altúra, six feet high; déz pés de largúra, ten feet broad.

The adjectives signifying experience, knowledge, or science, require em, or no, na, nos, nas, after them; as, versádo, nos livros, versed in books; expérto na

medicina, expert in medicine.

The cardinal nouns require the genitive case after them; as, hum dos dous, one of the two.

The ordinal nouns, as well as the collective and proportional, likewise require the genitive after them; as, o primeiro dos réys, the first of the kings, húma dúzia de óvos, a dozen of eggs, &c.

Of the Syntax of Comparatives and Superlatives.

The comparative is not made of the positive in Portuguese, as in Latin and English, but by adding máis, more, or ménos, less which govern que, signifying than; as, o tódo hé mayór que a párte, the whole is greater than the part; o séu amante he máis béllo, máis móço, e máis rico que élla, her lover is handsomer, younger and richer than she is; éu ácho-o agóra ménos béllo do que quândo o compréi, I now find it less handsome than when I bought it.

The simple comparatives máis, and ménos, meeting with a noun of number, are attended by de; as, aînda que élle tivésse máis de cem hómens, though he has above an hundred men; élle tem máis de vinte ânnos, he is above twenty.

When the comparison is made by so as, as much as, they must be rendered by cômo.

#### EXAMPLE.

O mêu lívro he táô bello cômo o vósso, my book is as handsome as yours; hum príncipe naô he taô poderôso cômo hum réy, a prince is not so powerful as a king.

They put sometimes muito and pouco before the simple comparatives mais and menos; as, elle he muito mais grande, he is taller by much; elle he pouco mais grande, he is taller by little, &c.

### CHAP. IV.

#### OF THE SYNTAX OF PRONOUNS.

WE have sufficiently explained the pronouns in the first part; and to avoid any further repetition,

I shall only observe, that,

1st. The English make use of the verb to be, put impersonally through all its tenses in the third person, before the pronouns personal, I, thou, he, she, we, you, they; it is I; it is he, &c. In Portuguese the verb to be, on this occasion, is not impersonal; as they express, it is I, by sôu éu; it is thou, és tu; it is he, he élla; it is we, sômos nós; it is ye, sôis vôs, it is she, he élla: it is they, masc. sáõ élles; it is they, fem. sáō éllas; and in like manner through all the tenses; as, it was I, éra eu; it was we, éramos nós, &c.

2ndly. The Portuguese seldom make use of the second person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends, or speaking to God, or a father and mother to their children, or to servants; thus, you are in the right of it, is expressed by  $vm^{ee}$  tem  $raz\acute{a}\~o$ , instead of  $t\acute{e}ndes$   $raz\acute{a}\~o$ ;  $c\acute{o}mo$  est $\acute{a}$   $vm^{ee}$ ? how do you do? In the plural they say  $vm^{ees}$ .

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after  $vm^{ee}$  V. S. V. E. &c. it does not agree in gender with  $vm^{ee}$  V. S. &c. but with the person we speak to, or we speak of, thus we say to a lady or woman;  $vm^{ee}$  he muito billa, you are very beautiful; and to a man,  $vm^{ee}$  he muito bim, you are very good.

3dly. Nos is generally used by the king, a governor, or a bishop, in their writings, and then it signifies in English we; as, nos mandamos, or mandamos, we command; but nos before or after a verb in Por-

tuguese signifies us in English; as, elle nos disse,

he told us; dái-nos têmpo, give us time.

4thly. Vós is also applied to a single person, but only speaking to inferiors, or between familiar friends, to avoid the word thou, tu, which would

be too gross and unmannerly.

5thly. The pronouns conjunctive are joined to verbs, and stand for the dative and accusative cases, as, déu me, he gave me; âma-me, love me; but the pronouns personal are used instead of them when they are preceded by a preposition, and not immediately followed by a verb; êlle falléu contra mim,

he spoke against me.

6thly. When o, a, os, as, are joined to the present infinitive mood, they change the last r of it into lo, la, &c. thus; para áma-lo, to love him; para véla, or, vé las, to see her, or them, &c. and when they are joined to the preterperfect indicative of the verb fazér, and some others that have that tense ending in iz, they change the last z of them into lo, la, &c. as fi-lo, I did it; élle fé-lo, he did, or made it, &c. but when they are joined to the future indicative of any verb with the auxiliary verb havér, then they change the terminations réi, rás, &c. of the futures into lo, la, &c. as fá-lo-hei, I'll do it; ama-lo-hei, I'll love him, &c.

### Remarks on the Pronouns.

1st. Him, or it, which follow the verb in English, must be expressed in Portuguese as in the following

examples:

When him or it in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it must be expressed in Portuguese by o before or after the verb. Exam. I call him or it, éu o châmo, or éu châmo-o.

When him or it in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by o before the verb, o

lo after it, making an elision of the last consonant of the verb. Exam. Thou callest him or it, tu o châmas, or tu châma lo.

When him or it is joined with the third person singular of a verb, it may be expressed by o before or after the verb. Ex. He calls him or it, elle o

châma, or élle châma-o.

When him or it is with a verb in the first person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by o before the verb, or lo after it, making an elision, as in the second case. Ex. We call him or it, nós o chamâmos or nós chamâmo-lo.

When him or it is after a verb in the second person plural, it is expressed in Portuguese either by o before the verb, or lo after it, making an elision, &c. Ex. You call him or it, vos o chamáis, or vos chamái-lo.

When him or it follows the verb in the third person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by o before the verb, or no after it. Examp. They call him or it, élles o châmaõ, or élles châmaõ-no.

2ndly. Her or it after a verb in English is expressed in Portuguese by a, according to the rules

just now proposed.

3rdly. Them after a verb is expressed in Portuguese by os for the masculine, and by as for the feminine, according to the gender and the rules

proposed.

4thly. The words o, a, os, as, must always be put after the gerunds, but not before the infinitives. Examp. Seeing him, we must not say, o véndo, but véndo-o, because véndo is a gerund. To see him, instead of saying para vér-o, you must say para o vér, because it is in the infinitive.

5thly. The words lo, la, los, las, must always be put after the verbs. Examp. To see him, you must say para vê-lo, or para o vêr, and not para ol ver. The same words must follow also the adverb ei;

as, ei-lo aqui, here he is; ei-lo ali, there he is; ei-los aqui, here they are; ei-la ali, there she is; ei-las ali, there they are. They follow likewise the persons of the verbs: eu fi-lo; tu fizéste-lo; elle fé-

lo; nos fizémo-lo, &c. I made it, &c.

I have here been speaking of the words o, a, os as, lo, la, los, las, and not of the articles o, a, os, as; because when those words precede, and sometimes when they follow the verbs, they are not articles, but pronouns relative. They are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns.

### CHAP. V.

#### OF THE SYNTAX OF VERBS.

THE verbs through every tense and mood (except the infinitive) ought to be preceded by a nominative case, either expressed or understood, with which they must agree in number and person. The nominative is expressed when we say, êu âmo, tu cântas; understood when we say, cânto digo, &c.

The Portuguese, as well as English, use the second person plural, though they address them-

selves but to a single person.

#### EXAMPLES.

Mêu amígo, vôs náo têndes razáo, my friend, you are in the wrong.

And if we would speak in the third person, we must say, vem^{ce} tem razáő, sir, you are in the right.

The verb active governs the accusative; as, amo a virtude, I love virtue.

The verb passive requires an ablative after it; as, os doutos são envejados péllos ignorántes, the

learned are envied by the ignorant.

There is in Portuguese another way of making the passive, by adding the relative se to the third person singular or plural; as, âma se Dêos, God is loved.

When there are two nominatives singular before

a verb, it must be put in the plural number.

When a noun is collective, the verb requires the singular, not the plural; as, a génte está olhándo, the people are looking.

## Syntax of the Auxiliary Verbs.

The verb têr is made use of to conjugate all the compound tenses of verbs; as, tênho amádo, tínha amádo, I have loved, I had loved.

Tér signifies also to possess, to obtain; as ténho dinheiro, I have money; tem muita capacidade, he

has a great deal of capacity.

Havér, in account books and trade, expresses

credit or discharge.

Havér is also taken impersonally in Portuguese, and signifies in English there be; as ha muíto buro no Mexico, there is a great quantity of gold in Mexico.

Havér-se, made reciprocal, is the same as to behave, to act; as houve-se o governador com tal prudéncia, que, &c. the governor behaved with such wisdom, that, &c.

We have already observed the difference betwixt

sér and estár.

The verb estár is also used to conjugate the other verbs, chiefly expressing action; as estóu léndo, estóu escrevéndo, I am reading, I am writing.

Estár, with the preposition em, in or with, no na nos, nas, signifies to be present in a place; as estóu

no câmpo, I am in the country.

Estár, with the preposition para denotes the inclination of doing what the following verb expresses, but without a full determination; as, estôu para ir me para Lôndres, I have a mind to go and live in London.

Estár, with the preposition por, and the infinitive of the verb following, means, that the thing expressed by the verb is not yet done; as, isto está por escrevêr, this is not yet written; isto está por alimpár, this is not yet cleaned; estár por alguêm signifies to agree with one, or to be of his opinion.

N. B. See in the Third Part the different signi-

fications of the verbs estár and havér.

When sér signifies the possessive of one thing, it governs the genitive; as, a rúa hé d' el-réy, the street belongs to the king; ésta cása hé de méu páy, this house belongs to my father.

Em sér is taken for a thing to be whole or entire, without any alteration or mutilation; as, as fazén-

das estáo em sér, the goods are not sold.

## Of the Syntax of Verbs active, passive, &c.

When two verbs come together, with or without any nominative case, then the latter must be in the infinitive mood; as, quer vm^{ce} aprender a fallar In-

glez? will you learn to speak English?

All verbs active govern the accusative; but if they are followed by a proper name of God, man, or woman, or any noun expressing their qualities or title, then it governs the dative case; as, conhéço a séu páy, I know his father; Acháraő a Joaő no camínho, they found John in the road.

All verbs of gesture, moving, going, resting, or doing, as also the verbs that have the word that goes before, and the word that comes after, both belonging to one thing, require the nominative after them; as, *Pêdro vái errádo*, Peter goes on wrong;

opóbre dórme descançádo, the poor sleeps without care. Also the verb of the infinitive mood has the same case, when verbs of wishing and the like come after them; as tôdos dezéjaő sér rícos, every body wishes to be rich; ântes quiséra ser dôuto que parecélo, I had rather be learned than be accounted so.

After verbs the Portuguese express yes and no by que sim and que náõ. Example, créyo que sim, I be lieve yes; créyo que náõ, I believe not; dígo que sim, I say yes; cuído que náõ, I think not; apósto que sim, I lay yes; queréis apostár que náõ? have you a

mind to lay not?

Verbs signifying grief, compassion, want, remembrance, forgetting, &c. will have the genitive; as, pésame muito da môrte de séu irmão, I am very sorry for the death of your brother; élle môrre de fôme, he perishes by hunger; lémbre-se do que me disse, remember what you said to me; compadeçi-me das súas disgráças, I pitied him for his misfortunes; esquecime de túdo isto, all this I forgot.

The reciprocals of jeering, boasting, and distrusting, govern also the genitive; as, jactár-se, gloriár-

se, picár-se, envergonhár-se, &c.

All the verbs active govern the dative only when the substantive represents a person; as, éu conhéço

a vmce, &c. I know you, &c.

The following verbs belong to this rule of the dative: Jogár, to play; as, jogár cártas, to play at cards; jogár aos cêntos, to play at picquet; jogár ao xadréz, to play at chess, &c.

Obedecér, desobedecér agradár, comprazér; as, éu obedéço a Déos e el-réy, I obey God and the king; comprazéo em túdo aos soldádos, in all he pleased the

soldiers.

Mandár, when it signifies to command an army, company, &c. requires the accusative, but, when other things, the dative; as, êlle mandáva a cavallaría, he commanded the horse; o governadôr man-

dou a tódos os moradóres que se retirássem para súas cásas, the governor ordered all the inhabitants to retire into their houses.

Ir, to go; as, vôu a París, I go to Paris.

Assistir, ajudár, socorrêr, to help; assistir ao officio divino, to assist at divine service.

Saudár, to salute or greet; as, êlle sáuda a tôdos,

he salutes every body.

Fallár, to speak; satizfazêr, to satisfy; servír, to serve; favorecêr, to favour; ameaçár, to threaten.

The verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying, pardoning, will have the person in the dative case.

The impersonals acontecér, succedér, importár, pertencér, and the like to these, will have often two datives, of person; as, a mim me succedéo, it happened to me; a élle lhe convém, it suits him, or it is convenient for him; a élle náő lhe impórta, it does not concern him, &c.

All the active verbs require the accusative; and the Latin verbs which govern the accusative of the thing, and the dative of the person, govern generally the same in Portuguese; as, escrevéi o que digo a vósso irmáõ, write to your brother what I say.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying, will have an accusative of the doer or sufferer, and sometimes verbs neuter will have an accusative of the thing; as, gozár śaúde, to enjoy health; péço êste favôr, I ask this favour; êlle tóca muito bem fláuta, he plays very well on the flute; curár húma doénça, to cure a sickness.

Verbs passive, and the greatest part of the reciprocals require the ablative, with de, do, da, dos, das, por, or péllo, pélla, péllos, péllas; as fui chamádo por el-réy, I was called by the king; retiréi-me da cidáde, I retired from the city; élle fói amádo do pôvo, he was loved by the people. Except acostárse, which requires a dative, preceded by a; encostárse, which sometimes will have a dative, and some-

times an ablative, preceded by em, no, na, nos, or nas; metér-se, which requires an ablative; sentár-se, introduzír-se, &c. which must have the ablative with the preposition em, no, na, nos, nas.

The verbs joined with a noun which they govern, must have the infinitive with de; as, ténho vóntade

de rir, I am inclined to laugh.

The price of any thing bought or sold, or bar-

tered, will have the accusative with por.

The verb  $p \delta r$  se, when it signifies to begin, must have the infinitive, with the particle a; as,  $p \delta r$ -se a

chorár, to begin to cry.

Verbs of plenty, filling, emptying, loading, unloading, will have the ablative; as, ésta térra abúnda de trígo; this country abounds with corn; élle está carregádo de misérias, he is loaded with calamities.

Verbs denoting custom, help, beginning, exhortation, invitation, require the infinitive with the particle a; as, ajudár a semeár, to help to sow, convidóu me a ceár, he invited me to supper.

Verbs that signify distance, receiving, or taking away, will have the ablative; as, a Madéira dista de Marrócos 320 milhas, Madeira lies 320 miles

from Morocco.

Verbs signifying receiving, or taking away, gegerally require the ablative of the person; but they sometimes require an accusative: particularly the verb recéber, when it signifies to welcome, or to entertain: as, élle recébe tódos com muito agrádo, he gives his company a hearty reception, he makes them very welcome.

Verbs denoting obligation, govern the following infinitive with the preposition a; as, êu o obrigaréi

a fazêr îsto, I will oblige him to do it.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. will have the ablative with com; as, pelejou máis de húma hôra com séu irmáo, he quarrelled more than one hour with his brother.

After the verb substantive sér, to be, para is made use of as well as a: the first is employed to denote the use or destination of any thing; as, ésta pénna he para escrevér, this pen is to write with. But the particle a is used to denote only the action; as, elle fói o priméiro a fugir, he was the first to

run away.

Verbs of motion to a place always govern the dative; as, vôu à comédia, I go to the play. Though the verb voltár, to return, may also have an accusative, with the preposition para. But verbs of motion from a place govern the ablative with de, do, da, dos, das; as, vénho do câmpo, I come from the country. If the motion is through a place, then they govern the accusative, with por; as, passaréi por Lôndres, I will come by the way of London.

## Of the Use and Construction of the Tenses.

Although I have spoken at large upon the tenses

in the First Part, I would further observe,

1. That the infinitive and the auxiliary verb havér, are used together with the pronouns lo, la, los, las, instead of the future indicative; as, ouvir-lo-hei, I will hear him: and then the r of the infinitive is changed into lo, la, los, las; sometimes the infinitive and the auxiliary verb havér, are used with the pronouns conjunctive me, te, se, &c. instead of the same future; as, dar-lhe-hei, I will give him; agastar-se-há, he will be angry.

2. That when we find the particle if, which in Portuguese is expressed by se, before the imperfect indicative, we must generally use the imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese; example, se éu tivésse, if I had; se éu pudésse, if I could. But sometimes the imperfect indicative is used; as, disse-lhe que se queria, &c.; he told him that if he was willing, &c.

3. That the first imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese is also used in a sense that denotes the present, especially in sentences of wishing; as, quizéra que Domíngo fizésse bôm témpo, I wish it would be fine weather on Sunday. But if the same tense is preceded by ainda que, although, then it must be rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive, or by the imperfect indicative; as, êu nao a quizéra, aínda que tivésse milhôens de sêu, though she was worth several millions, I would not have her; aínda que êlle consentísse nisso, não se podía fazêr, although he would consent to it, that could not be done. Lastly, when the first imperfect subjunctive is preceded by se, it is sometimes rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive; as, se élle viésse, if he should come.

The English are apt to put the first imperfect of the subjunctive where the Portuguese make use of the second; as, I had been in the wrong, naõ tería tido razaõ; and though they may say naõ tivéra tido razaõ, they may not say naõ tivésse tido razaõ, to express the English of, I should have been in the

wrong, or I had been in the wrong.

Note, that to express in Portuguese, though that should be, we must say, quando isso fosse, and not seria.

The Portuguese use the future tense subjunctive after the conjunction if, when they speak of a future action, but the English, the present indicative: example, to-morrow, if I have time, amanhãa se tivér témpo, and not se ténho; if he comes, we shall see him, nos o verémos, se élle viér.

A conjunction between two verbs obliges the last to be of the same number, person, and tense as the first: example, the king wills and commands, cl réi quer e ordéna; I see and I know, éu véjo e conhéço.

Sometimes the present is made use of, instead of the preter definite in narrations, as, no mésmo tempo que hía andândo, o encôntra, o déspe, e o áta a húma

årvore, as he was going, he meets him, strips him, and ties him to a tree.

When the Portuguese use the infinitive with a third person in the plural, they add em to it, and it is generally preceded by por, for, and para, in order to, that, or to the end that; as, élles fôraõ enforcádos por furtárem, they were hanged for robbing; para sérem enformádos, that, to the end that they may be informed; para podérem dizér, that they may be able to say.

Observe, that when the Portuguese put por before the first future subjunctive, they speak of a time past; as, por fallardes, because you have spoken. But when they put para before it, then they speak of a time to come; as, para fallarmos, to give us an opportunity for speaking, in order to speak.

# Of Moods.

All the tenses of the indicative mood may be employed without any conjunction before them; but they admit also of some. Besides the conjunction que, those that may be made use of are se, cômo, and quândo; with some distinction in respect to se, because this conjunction is seldom used before the future tense, and then it is governed by a verb signifying ignorance, doubt, or interrogation; as, naō séi se haō de aír, I do not know whether they will come? estou em dávida se os inimígos passaráō o río, I doubt whether the enemy will pass the river; naō pergúnto se partirá, I do not ask whether he will set out.

The optative or subjunctive in Portuguese has always some sign annexed; as, oxalá, prouvéra a Deos, ó se! would to God, I pray God, God grant; &c.; que para, que, &c. that, &c.

The particle que is not expressed in the present tense of this mood; but it is understood in sen-

tences of wishing or praying; as, Déos o fáça bom, let God amend him.

When que is between two verbs, the last is not always put in the subjunctive, because, though some say créyo que vénha, I believe he comes; I think it is better to say créyo que vem; but when there is a negation, the verb following que must be put in the subjunctive; as, não crêyo que vénha, I do not believe he will come, não créyo que vénha tao cêdo, 1 do not believe he will come so soon.

When the verbs crêr, to believe, sabêr, to know, are used interrogatively, and followed by the particle que, the next verb is put in the indicative, when the person that asked the question makes no doubt of the thing which is the object in question; as, if knowing that peace is made, I want to know if the people whom I converse with know it too, I should express myself thus, sabéis vós que está feita a paz? do you know that peace is made? But if I have it only by a report, and doubt of it, and want to be informed of it, I must ask the question thus, sabéis vós que a paz estéja feita? and not sabéis vós que está feita a paz ?

Observe also, that the present subjunctive of sabêr is elegantly used when it is attended by a negative, and the particle que in this phrase, não que

êu saiba, not that I know of.

All the verbs used impersonally with the particle que require the subjunctive; as, he preciso que élle v nha, he must come; convêm que isto se faça, it is convenient that this be done. You must only except such sentences as express any positive assurance, or certainty; as, he certo que vem, it is certain that he comes; sei que está em cása, I know he is at home.

From these observations it follows, that all the verbs not expressing a positive assurance, or believing, but only denoting ignorance, doubt, fear, astonishment, admiration, wishing, praying, pretension,

or desire, govern the subjunctive mood after que; as, duvido que póssa, I doubt if it be in his power; têmo que môrra, I am afraid he will die; admiro-me que consinta nisso, I wonder he agrees to it, &c.; to all which they add oxalá, an Arabic word, signifying God grant, which is used in Portuguese before all the tenses of the optative or conjunctive, as well as práza a Dêos, may it please God; or, prouvéra a Déos, might it please God.

When que is relative, and there is a verb in the imperative or in the indicative, with a negative or interrogation before it, it governs likewise the subjunctive; as não ha côusa que mais me inquiéte, there is nothing that disturbs me more; ha cousa no múndo que me possa dar tânto gôsto? is there any thing in the world that may give me more pleasure? allegáilhe tântas razôens que o póssao persuadir, give him

so many reasons that he may be persuaded.

The present subjunctive is sometimes rendered into English by the second preterimperfect subjunctive, when it is followed by a verb in the future tense; as, aínda que êu trabalhe, núnca héi de cançar, though I should work, I never should be tired.

The Portuguese use specially the same present subjunctive for the future; as in these sentences,

and others like:

Não duvido que vénha, I do not doubt but he will come.

Duvido que o fáça, I doubt that, or whether he will do it.

Therefore avoid carefully those faults which foreigners are so apt to make, in considering rather the tense which they want to turn into Portuguese, than the mood which the genius of the language requires.

The present indicative is also used for the future, as well as in English: example, jantais hôje em cása? do you dine at home to-day?

Of the Particles governing the Optative or Subjunctive.

The conjunction que, that, generally requires the subjunctive after it; but antes que, priméiro que, be-

fore that, always requires it.

Que makes all the words to which it is joined become conjunctives, as, para que, to the end that, bem que, ainda que, &c. Posto que, although; até que, till; quando, como quérqué, which commonly govern the subjunctive. But com que assim governs the indicative; as, com que, or com que assim virá

amanháã, so he will come to-morrow.

In Portuguese to express though, or although, if it is by ainda que, you may put either the subjunctive or indicative after it: example; ainda que séja hómem honrádo, though he is an honest man; ainda que élle faz aquillo, though he does that. But if you render although or though by nao obstânte, then you must use the infinitive; example, though he is an honest man; nao obstânte sêr êlle hómem honrádo; though he does this, nao obstante fazêr élle isto.

The impersonal verbs generally govern the subjunctive with que; but with this distinction, when the impersonal is in the present tense or future, of the indicative mood, then it requires the present subjunctive mood; but when the impersonal, or any other verb taken impersonally, is in any of the preterites indicative, then it governs the imperfect, perfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, according to the meaning of the sentence; as, importa muito que el-réy véja tudo, it is of great moment that the king may see all; foi convienênte que o principe fosse com élle, it was convenient that the prince should go with him.

The present subjunctive is likewise construed, when the particle por is separated from que by an adjective; as, por grande, por admiravel, por douto que séja, though he be great, admirable, learned.

An imperative often requires the future of the subjunctive; as succèda o que succedér, or séja o que for, happen what shall happen, at all events.

The imperfect subjunctive is repeated in this phrase, and others like, succedésse, o que succedésse,

let happen what would.

The future of the subjunctive mood follows generally these, lógo que, quândo, se, cômo, &c.; as, lógo que chegár irêmos a passeár, as soon as he comes, we will go and take a walk; quândo viêr, estarêmos prómptos, when he comes we shall be ready.

Observe that quândo and lógo que may also be construed with the indicative mood; as, quândo elréy vé tudo, não o engânão, when the king sees every thing, he is not deceived; lógo que chegou, falléi com

elle, as soon as he came, I spoke with him.

## Of the Infinitive Mood.

In Portuguese there is not a general sign before the infinitive, as in English the particle to; but there are several particles used before the infinitive, denoting the same as to does in English, and they are governed by the preceding verbs or nouns. These particles are the following: a, para, de, com, em, por, até, despôis de; and the article o, when the infinitive serves as a nominative to another verb; as, o dizêr e o fazêr saō dúas côusas, saying and doing are two different things.

A coming between two verbs, denotes the second as the object of the first; as, a tardânça das nóssas esperânças nos ensína a mortificar os nóssos dezéjos, the delay of our hopes teaches us to mortify our desires; élle coméça a discorrér, he begins to reason.

Para denotes the intention or usefulness; as, a adversidade sérve para experimentar a paciência, adversity serves to try one's patience. Para after an adjective denotes its object; as, está prompto para obedecêr, he is ready to obey.

De is put between two verbs, if the first governs the genitive or ablative; and when the substantive or adjective governs either of these two cases, de must go before the following verbs, or infinitive; as, vénho de vér a méu páy, I have just seen my father; he témpo de hír-se, it is time to go away; el-réy foi servído de mandár, the king has

been pleased to order.

The infinitive is on several occasions governed by prepositions or conjunctions; as, sem dizer palavra, without speaking a word; where you may observe it is expressed in English by the participle present; as núnca se cánça de jugár, he is never weary of playing; diverte-se em caçár, he delights in hunting; élle está doênte por trabalhár demasiádamente, by working too much he is sick; pérde o séu témpo em passeár, he loses his time in walking; héi-de ir-me sem me despedír? shall I go away without taking my leave?

The infinitive is also used passively; as não há que dizér, que vér, &c.; there is nothing to be said,

seen, &c.

The gerund of any verb active may be conjugated with the verb estár, to be, after the same manner as in English; as, estóu escrevéndo, I am writing; elle estáva dormíndo, he was asleep, &c.

### CHAP. VI.

OF THE SYNTAX OF PARTICIPLES AND GERUNDS.

THE participle in the Portuguese language generally ends in do, or to; as, amádo, visto, dito, &c.

The active participles that follow the verb  $t\hat{e}r$ , to have, must end in o; as,

Tênho visto el réy, I have seen the king.

Ténho visto a rainha, I have seen the queen. Eu tínha amádo os lívros, I had loved books.

Eu tínha levádo as cártas, I had carried the letters.

We meet with authors who sometimes make the participles agree with the thing of which they are speaking; as, in *Camoens*, Canto 1, Stanza xxix.

E porque cômo vístes, tem passádos. Na viágem tao ásperos perígos,

Tântos climas, e céos experimentádos, &c.

And Canto 2, Stan. lxxvi.

São offerecimêntos verdadéiros, E palávras, sincéras, não dobrádas,

As que o réy mânda a os nóbres cavaleiros,

Que tânto mar e térras tem passádas.

If it be a verb neuter, the participle ought always

to terminate in o: example,

El-réy tem jantádo, the king has dined; a raínha tem ceádo, the queen has supped; os vóssos amígos tem rído, your friends have laughed; mínhas irmáãs, tem dormído, my sisters have slept.

When the active participle appears to precede an infinitive, it must be terminated in o; as o juiz lhe tinha feito cortár a cabêça, the judge has caused

his head to be cut off.

The passive participles which are joined with the tenses of the verb  $s\acute{e}r$ , to be, agree with the substantive that precedes the verb  $s\acute{e}r$ ; o capitáõ fôi louvádo, the captain was praised; a virtúde he estimáda, virtue is esteemed; os preguiçósos saõ censurádos, the lazy are blamed; as vóssas jóyas fóraõ vendídas, your jewels were sold.

The Portuguese generally suppress the gerunds having and being before the participles; as, dito isto, having said so; acabádo o sermão, the sermon being ended. This manner of speaking is called by

grammarians ablatives absolute.

The participle of the present tense in Portuguese has singular and plural, but one termination serves for both genders; as hum homem temente a Déos, a

man fearing God; húma molhér temênte a Déos, a woman fearing God; hómens temêntes a Déos,

people fearing God.

There are many participles which are used substantively; as, ignorante, amante, ouvinte, estudante, &c.; an ignorant, a lover, an auditor or hearer, a scholar, &c.

It is better to place the nominative after the gerund than before; as estándo el-réy na comédia,

the king being at the play.

### CHAP. VII.

#### OF PREPOSITIONS.

A PREPOSITION is a part of speech, which is put before nouns, and sometimes before verbs, to

explain some particular circumstance.

Prepositions may be divided into separable and inseparable. An inseparable preposition is never found but in compound words, and signifies nothing of itself. A separable preposition is generally separated from other words, and signifies something of itself.

### The inseparable prepositions are,

Ab and abs; as abrogár, to abrogate; Abstér-se, to abstain.

Arce, or archi; as, arcebispo, an archbishop; archidúque, an archduke.

Ad; as, adventício, adventitious.

Am; as ambiguo, ambiguous; ampáro, protection, shelter.

Circum; as, circumstância, circumstance.

Co; as, cohabitár, to live together, to cohabit.

Des, serves to express the contrary of the word it is joined to; as, desacérto, mistake; desfazér, to

undo; desenganár, to undeceive; are the contrary of acérto, fazér, and enganár.

Dis; as, dispôr, to dispose; distinguir, to distin-

guish; distribuir, to distribute.

Ex; as, extrahir, to extract.

In, has commonly a negative or privative sense, denoting the contrary of the meaning of the word it precedes; as, incapáz, unable; infeliz, unhappy; inacção, inaction, &c.; but sometimes it is affirmative, as in Latin.

Observe, that in before r is changed into ir; as, irregular, irregular; irracionál, irrational: before l, into il; as illegítimo, illegitimate; before m, in is

changed into im; as, immaterial, immaterial.

 $O\tilde{b}$ ; as, obviár, to obviate.

Pos; as, pospór, to postpose, or to postpone.

Pre; as, precedér, to go before; predecessor, an ancestor.

Pro; as, propôr, to propose; prometêr, to promise.

Re, is a participle borrowed from the Latins, which generally denotes iteration, or backward action; as, reedificár, to rebuild; repercutír, to repercute, or strike back.

So; as, socorrêr, to help to succour.

Sor; as, sorrir to smile. Sos; as, sostér, to support.

Soto; as, sotopôr, to put or lay under.

Sub; or sob; as, subaltérno, subaltern; subscrevér,

to subscribe; sobpėna, sobcolor, &c.

The Arabic article al, which is common to all genders and both numbers, is found in the beginning of almost all the words that remain in the Portuguese language from the Arabic, and it is the surest way to distinguish them. But the Portuguese articles are added to the Arabic nouns, without taking off their article, al, as a almofáda, the cushion; o Alcoraõ, the Koran, &c.

The Greek preposition anti enters into the composition of a great many Portuguese words, which cannot be set down here. It is enough to observe, that it signifies generally opposite; as in Antipodas, Antipodes; antipápa, antipope; and sometimes it signifies before; as in antilóquio, a preface, a speaking first; but in this last sense it is derived from the Latin preposition ante.

## Of Separable Prepositions.

It is absolutely impossible ever to attain to the knowledge of any language whatever, without thoroughly understanding the various relations denoted by the prepositions, and the several cases of nouns which they govern; both which relations and cases being arbitrary, vary and differ much in all languages. This only instance will evince it: the English say, to think of a thing; the French, to think to a thing; the Germans and Dutch, to think on, or upon a thing; the Spaniards and Portuguese, to think in a thing, &c. Now it will avail an Englishman but little to know that of is expressed in Portuguese by de, if he does not know what relations em and de denote in that language; since the Portuguese say, to think in a thing, and not of a thing; therefore we will treat here of each of them, and of their construction separately.

1st. A, or rather ao, as, aos, (at, in, on, &c.) de-

note the place whither one is going; as,

Eu vôu a Lôndres, I go to London.
Voltár a Portugál, to return, or go back to Por-

tugal.

A, in this sense, is a preposition, but in the following observations, it is a particle.

2ndly. A denotes time; as, chegár a têmpo, to

arrive in time; a tôdo o têmpo, at all times.

3rdly. A denotes the mode of being, or of doing of people; as also their posture, gesture, or action; as

Estár á súa vontáde, to be at one's ease.

A direita, on the right hand; á esquêrda, on the left hand.

Vivêr à súa vontâde, to live to one's mind, as one likes.

Andár a pé ou a cavállo, to go on foot, or on horseback.

Montár a cavállo, to ride on horseback. Corrér á rédea sólta, to ride full speed.

Trajár á Francésa, to dressafter the French mode. Vivér á Ingléza, to live after the English fashion. Andár a grándes pássos, to walk at a great rate. Andár a pássos léntos, to walk very slowly.

4thly. A denotes the price of things; as, a oito velins, at eight shillings. It denotes also the weight: but as the nouns signifying weight are generally used in the plural number, s is added to a, when it is placed before nouns of the feminine gender, and when it precedes nouns of the masculine gender: thus, as onças, by the ounce; aos arrateis, by the pound, &c. A denotes also the measure; as, medir a pálmos, to span or measure by the hand extended.

When a is preceded by daquí, and followed by a noun of time, it denotes the space of time after which something is to be done: as, el-rey partirá daquí a tres días, the king will set out three days hence.

5thly. A denotes the tools used in working, as likewise the games one plays at; as, abrir ao buril, to grave; where o is added to a; trabalhar a candéa, to do any thing by candle-light; a agulha, with the needle.

Andár á véla, to sail, or to be under sail.

Jogár a péla, to play at tennis.

Jogár as cártas, to play at cards; here s is added to a, the noun being of the feminine gender and plural number.

Jogár aos cêntos, to pay at piquet; here os is added to a, as preceding a noun signifying a game,

of the masculine gender and plural number.

6thly. A signifies sometimes as. Examp. Está isto a séu gósto? Is this as you like it? And sometimes it signifies after; as, a séu módo, after his or her way. It signifies also in; as, ao princípio, in the beginning; but then o is added to it.

7thly. A is also put before infinitives, preceded by another verb; as ensinár a cantár, to teach to sing. It is also placed between two equal numbers, to denote order; as, dous a dous, two by two; quátro a quátro, four by four: and sometimes it is preceded by a participle or adjective, and followed

by an infinitive mood.

8thly. A is a particle of composition, with many nouns, verbs, and adverbs, of which it often increases the meaning; as, adinheirádo, very rich, that has a great deal of money; but it generally expresses in verbs the action of the nouns they are composed of; as, ajoelhár, to kneel down, which is formed from a and joélho, knee; abrandár, to appease; alargár, to enlarge; from brándo, soft; lárgo, wide, &c.

9thly. A, when it is preceded by the verb sér, and followed by the pronouns personal, signifies in the stead of; as, se éu fôsse a vós, faría aquilo, If I

were you (in your place), I would do that.

10thly. When a is placed before cása, and the sense implies going to, it is Englished by to, but the word cása is left out; as, élle foi a cása do governador, he went to the governor's. You must observe, that

a in this sense is a preposition.

11thly. A'o pé signifies near; as, pônde hum ao pé do ôutro, place, put, or set them near one another. Sometimes mésmo comes before ao pé, to express still more the nearness of a thing, and mésmo ao pé is Englished by hard by, just by, &c.; as, a súa cása está mésmo ao pé da mínha, his house is just by mine.

12thly. When the noun respecto is preceded by a, it is used in the same sense as em comparação, but requires one of these particles, do, da, dos, das, after it, and signifies in comparison of, in regard to, in respect of; as, isto he nada a respecto do que posso dizer, this is nothing to other things that I can say.

13thly. When a comes before a verb neuter, it marks a dative; and after a verb active, an accusa-

tive case.

A before the verb proposito is used in familiar discourse; as, a proposito, esquecime de dizer-vos o outro dia; now I think on't, I forgot to tell you the

other day.

14thly. Ao revéz, or as avéssas, are also used as prepositions, attended by, de, do, da, &c.; and it signifies quite the reverse, or, contrary; as, élle faz túdo ao revéz, or as avéssas do que ouvéra de ser, ou do que lhe dízem, he does every thing quite the reverse of right, or contrary to what he is bid.

15thly. A before trôco signifies provided that. It is also used before the word tiro, as, a tiro de péça,

within cannon-shot.

16thly. Cára a cára, côrpo a côrpo, signify face to face, body to body. Tomár húma côusa a bôa ou a má párte, signifies to take a thing well or ill.

Such are the chief relations denoted by the particle a. The others must be learned in construing

and reading good Portuguese books.

1st. De, or rather do, da, dos, das, (of, from, &c.) denote, first, the place one comes from; as, sahir de Londres, to go out of London; vir de Frânça, das I'ndias, &c.; to come from France, from the Indies, &c.

2nd. De between two nouns denotes the quality of the person expressed by the first noun; as, hum hômem de hônra, a man of honour: or the matter which the thing of the first noun is made of; as,

Húma estátua de mármore, a statue of marble.

Húma pônte de madeira ou de pêdra, a wood or

stone bridge.

Observe, that two nouns so joined with de are commonly Englished by two nouns likewise, but without a preposition, or rather by a compound word, whose first noun (whether substantive or adjective) expresses the matter and quality, manner, form, and use of the other; as a stone bridge, hima ponte de pédra; a dancing-master, hum méstre de dânça.

3rd. De, do, da, dos, das, are used after the participles of the preterite, with sêr; as sêr amádo, ou bem visto do pôvo, dos sábios, &c; to be beloved by

the people, by the learned, &c.

Do serves for the masculine, da for the feminine,

and de for both.

4th. De sometimes signifies by; as, de nôite, by

night; de día, by day.

5th. De before em, and many nouns of time denotes the regular interval of the time after which something begins again; as, êu vôu vêlo de dôus em dôus días, I go to see him every other day; and before nouns of place and adverbs repeated with em or para between, de denotes the passing from one place or condition to another; as, corrêr de rúa em rúa, to run from street to street; de mal para peôr, worse and worse.

6th. De after some verbs, signifies after or in; as élle portou-se d'ésta sorte, he behaved in or after this manner.

7th. De is used before an infinitive, and is then governed by some preceding noun or verb; as capáz de ensinar, capable of teaching; dígno de ser amádo, worthy to be loved, &c.; procurár de fazér, to endeavour to do; authoridáde de pregár, the power or authority of preaching, &c.

8th. De is sometimes Englished by on; as, por-

se de joélhos, to kneel down on one's knees.

De between two nouns denotes the use which

a thing is designed for; as, azêite de candéa, lampoil; àrma de fôgo, a fire-arm, moinho de vênto, a windmill.

This relation is expressed in English by two nouns, making a compound word: the first of which signifies the manner, form, and use, denoted by the Portuguese preposition; as cadeira de bráços, an arm-chair, or elbow-chair; véla de céra, a waxcandle, &c.

10. De denotes sometimes the quality of things; as, mêyas de tres fios, stockings with three threads. Sometimes it denotes also the price; as, pânno de

dezôito xelins, eighteen shilling cloth.

11. De is sometimes Englished by upon; as, vivér or sustentár se de péixe, to live upon fish. Sometimes it is Englished by with; as, morrêr de frío, to starve with cold.

12. De sometimes signifies for or out of; as, saltár de alegria, to leap for joy; de modésto, out of modesty.

13. De signifies sometimes at; as, zombar de al-

guêm, laugh at one.

14. De is sometimes left out in English; as, go-

zár de húma côusa, to enjoy a thing.

15. De, followed by two nouns of number and the preposition até between them, is Englished by between; as, hum hômem de quarênta até cincoénta annos, a man between forty and fifty.

16. De, preceded by the preposition diante, is left out in English; as, diante de mim, before me; di-

ânte de Dêos, before God.

17. De, when it is placed before casa, and the sense implies coming from, is Englished by from; but the word cása sometimes is left out in English, and sometimes not; as, vénho de cása (meaning my house) I come from home, from my house: but vénho da cása da Senhôra C. must be rendered in English thus, I am returning from Mrs. C.'s.

M

Finally, de is used before several words; as, de brúços, lying all along on the ground; de madrugáda, soon in the morning; de véras, in earnest, seriously; de veráõ, in summer; hómem de palávra, a man as good as his word; de cóstas, backwards, or on one's back; andár de pé, to be sickly without being bed-rid; and many others, which must be learned by use.

### A'ntes.

III. Antes, before, shows a relation of time, of which it denotes priority; and is always opposite to depôis, after; as, ántes da criação do múndo, before the creation of the world.

Priméiro is also a preposition; as, élle chegou

priméiro que éu, he arrived before me.

### Diânte.

IV. Diânte, before, shows a relation of place, and it is always opposite to detrâz, behind. It signifies also sometimes em or na presênça; as, ha ârvores diânte de súa cása, there are trees before his house; pônde aquillo diânte do fôgo, set or put that before the fire; prégár diânte del-réi, to preach before the king.

Diânte is also sometimes an adverb, and may be used instead of adiânte; as, ir diânte or adiânte, to go before; but in the following phrase you must say, não vádes tânto adiânte, and not diânte, don't go so far; por diânte is to be Englished by on in the

following phrase, ide por diânte, go on.

### Depôis.

V. Depóis, after, denotes posteriority of time, and is used in opposition to ântes; as, depôis do dilúvio, after the deluge: depôis do méio dia, afternoon.

Depôis also is used with an infinitive; as, feito aquillo, or tendo feito aquillo, or depôis de fazêr

aquillo, after having done that; and it is also made a conjunction with que, governing the indicative; as, depôis que têve feito aquillo, after he had done that.

### Detráz.

VI. Detráz, behind, denotes posteriority both of place and order, and it is said in opposition to diánte; as, a súa cása está detráz da vôssa, his house is behind yours; élle vínha detráz de mim; he walked after me.

#### Em.

VII. Em, or no, na, nos, nas (in, into, within, &c.) denote a relation both of time and place. The many various significations in which these prepositions are used, must be accurately observed, and much regard had to them in practice.

No and na are sometimes rendered into English by a; as, dúas vêzes no dia, na semâna, &c. twice a

day, a week, &c.

No, na, &c. are always used before nouns denoting the place wherein something is kept; as, está no gabinéte, it is in the closet; na papeléira, in the bureau; nas gavétas, in the drawers; na rúa, in the street, &c. but sometimes they are Englished by upon; as, cahír no cháo, to fall upon the ground.

Em, no, na, &c. signifies commonly in; as, em, Londres, in London; está na gráça del-réy, he is in favour with the king; but in some cases it has a very particular meaning; as, estár em córpo, which signifies literally to be in body; but the true sense of it is, to be without a cloak; so that the body is more exposed to view without an upper garment. Estár em pérnas, literally, to be in legs, signifies to be barelegged; that is, the legs exposed without stockings. Estár em camísa is said of one that has only the shirt on his back.

When this preposition em is before an infinitive, then it is an English gerund; as, consiste em fallár bem, it consists in speaking well; but when it is

found before a gerund, it signifies as soon as; as, em acabándo iréi, as soon as I have done, I will go

Nos nóssos témpos is Englished by now-a-days.

Em is used in sentences that imply a general sense; as E'lle está em miserável estádo, he is in a wretched condition; and not no miserável; but if the sentence implies a particular sense, you must make use of no, na, &c. as, no miserável estádo em que élle está in the wretched condition wherein he is; and not em miserável. You must observe in this last example and the like, that em is to be used before que, and not no, na, &c. which are to be placed only before qual; therefore you must not say, no miserável estádo no que élle está; but no miserável estádo

no qual êlle está.

Em, construed with pronouns without an article, makes a sort of adverb, rendered into English by a preposition and a noun; thus in this sentence, nós irémos em côche we shall go in a coach, em côche is an adverb of manner, which shows how we shall go: but no côche denotes something besides: as if a company were considering how they shall ride to a place, somebody would say, vós ireis na cadeirinha, e nós no côche, you shall go in the chair, and we in the coach; no côche would be said in opposition to na cadeirínha, and both respectively to some specified chair and coach; or else they should say, vós iréis em cadeirínha, e nós em côche. But in this other sentence, eu deixêi o meu chapéo no côche, I lest my hat in the coach, it would be improper to say em côche, because some particular coach is meant, that which has drove me here or there, or which has been spoken of.

We say de veráo, no verao, or em o veráo; de invér-

no, no invérno, &c. in summer, in winter, &c.

Em is also rendered into English by at; as, em tôdo o témpo, at all times.

Em is used, and never no, na, &c. before proper names of cities and authors; as élle está em Lóndres, he is in London; nós lémos em Cícero, we read in

Cicero. But they say no Pôrto, in Oporto.

Em, and no, na, &c. are construed with the names of kingdoms; as, em or na, Inglatérra, in England: but no, na, is most commonly construed with names of provinces; as, no Alentéjo, na Beira, &c. in Alentejo, in Beira, &c.

Em is sometimes rendered into English by into: as, Narciso fôi transformádo em flór, Narcissus was metamorphosed into a flower: and sometimes by

to; as de rua em rua, from street to street.

No, na, are sometimes rendered into English by against; as, dar co' a cabéça na paréde, to dash one's

head against the wall.

No, na, &c. are also rendered into English by in, and sometimes by into; as ter hum menino nos bráços, to hold a child in one's arms; entregár algúma côusa nas maos de alguém, to deliver a thing into somebody's hands.

Em is used before the word travéz, as in this phrase, por-se de mar em travéz com alguém, to fall

out together.

Em before a noun of time, denotes the space of time that slides away in doing something; as, el-réy foi a Hanóver, em tres días, the king went to Hanover in three days; that is, he was no longer than three days in going.

Em is sometimes used after the verb hír, to go; as, vái em quátro méses que éu aquí cheguéi, it is now going on four months since I came hither.

Em before quanto, and sometimes without it, is rendered into English by while or whilst; as, em quanto vos fazeis aquillo, eu farei isto, while you do that, I shall do this; but if they are followed by a noun of time with an interrogation, then they must be rendered into English by in how much, or many; as, em quanto tempo? in how much time? Ob-

serve, that em quanta mim, a ti, a elle, &c. are rendered into English by for what concerns me, thee, him, &c.

No serves for the masculine, na for the feminine, and em for both.

Em signifies as; as, em sinál da sua amizáde, as a token of his friendship; em prémio, as a reward.

The prepositions em, no, na, &c. and déntro, have very often the same signification, therefore they may sometimes be used one instead of the other; as está na gavéta, or déntro da gavéta, it is in the drawer; está na cidáde, or déntro da cidáde, he is in town.

Em before the words favor, utilidade, consideraçám, razáo, and the like, signifies in behalf of, for the sake of, on account of, &c. as, em razão das béllas acçõens que élle tem feito, in consideration of the

great things he has performed.

Observe, that they very often make an elision of the last vowels, o, a, of the preposition no, na, when there is a vowel in the beginning of the next word; n' ágoa, instead of na ágoa; they also cut off the e of the preposition em, and change the m into n, as you may see in Camoens, Canto 2, Stanza xxxii. n' algúm pôrto, instead of em algum porto, wherein you must observe that n' is to be Englished by to or into.

### Com.

VII. This preposition signifies with, and it denotes conjunction, union, mixing, assembling, keeping company; as, casár húma donzélla com hum hómem honrádo, to marry a maid with an honest man; hir com alguém, to go with one; com a ajúda de Déos, by God's help, &c.

Observe that most of the adverbs formed of the adjectives are turned in Portuguese by the preposition com and the substantive; as, atrevidaménte, boldly, com atreviménto, with boldness; elegante-

mênte, elegantly; com elegância, with elegance; cortezmênte, politely, com cortezía, with politeness, &c.

The last consonant m is very often cut off, even before the noun of number hum, one; and so they say, cum, instead of  $com\ hum$ , as may be seen in Camoens, Cant. 2, Stanza xxxvii.

With me, with thee, with himself, &c. are rendered into Portuguese by commigo, comtigo, or comvôsco,

comsigo comnôsco, comvôsco, comsigo.

When com is preceded by para, it signifies to-wards, and sometimes over, in English; as, sejámos piedósos para com os póbres, let us be merciful to-wards the poor. Ter grande podér para com alguém, to have great influence over somebody's mind.

Com before the word capa is used metaphorically,

and then it signifies under colour or pretext.

#### Para.

VIII. Para is rendered into English by for; but it signifies also to, when it is found before the infinitive, and denotes the intention, or purpose in doing something; as, éste livro he para méu irmaő, this book is for my brother; ésta pénna he para escrevér, this pen is to write; Déos nos féz para amálo, God made us for to love him; o comér he necessário para conservár a vída, eating is necessary for preserving life.

Para que is rendered into English by for what; as, para que he isto? for what is this? and sometimes by that, or in order that; as, para que vénha vérme, that he may come and see me. But porqué signifies why, for what, upon what account, as, porqué não víndes? why don't you come? but when it is not followed by an interrogation, it signifies because.

Para serves likewise before the verbs, to denote what one is able to do in consequence of his present disposition; as, êlle hé bastantemênte forte para andar a cavállo, he is strong enough to ride; elle tem bas-

tánte cabedál para sustentár-se, he has means enough to maintain himself; a occasião he muito favorável para nos não servír-mos délla, the occasion is too

favourable to let it slip.

Para expresses also the capacity or incapacity of doing any thing; as, élle hé hómem para isto, he is the proper man wanted for this; hé hómem para pouco, he is good for little; hé hómem para náda, he is good for nothing.

This preposition is also used to denote the end or motive of doing any thing; as, trabálho para o bem público, I work for the public good; hum hospitál

para os póbres, an hospital for the poor.

Para is a preposition of time; as isto me basta para tôdo o ânno; this is sufficient to me for all the year; estao unidos para sêmpre, they are united for ever; para dôus mêses éra muito pôuco, for two months it was too little.

Para is sometimes preceded by the adverb lá, and followed by a noun of time, and then it is Englished by against or towards; as, lá para o fim da semána, against the end of the week, or towards the end of the week.

Para is sometimes Englished by considering, or with respect to; as, este menino está muito adiantádo para a idáde que tem, or para o pôuco têmpo que aprênde, this child is very forward for his age, or considering the little time he has learned; para Ingléz fálla demasiadamênte, he talks too much considering that he is an Englishman.

Para signifies sometimes just or ready to; as, élle está para partír, he is just going away, he is ready

to go.

Para is also used before the word gráças; as, élle não hé para gráças, he takes no jest; élle não está para gráças, he is out of humour, or he is in an ill humour.

Para onde? signifies whither? to what place?

Para que? or para que fim? signifies to what end or purpose? Para cima signifies upward.

Para húma e ôutra parte, signifies to both sides,

places, or parts.

Para is also Englished by towards, and is said of places; as, para o oriênte, towards, or to the east.

Para onde quer que, signifies whither, or to what

place thou wilt, any where.

Para ôutra parte, signifies towards another place.

Para comigo, towards me.

Para o diânte, signifies for the time to come.

De mim, para mim, signifies for what concerns me. Para is used by Camoens. Cant. 2, Stanza xxiv.

before the preposition detráz, and signifies back-

wards.

Para between two nouns of number is Englished by or, and sometimes by and; as, hum homem de quarênta para cincoênta ânnos, a man between forty and fifty; dista quatro para cinco légoas, it is about four or five leagues distant.

#### Por.

IX. Por, pêllo, pêlla, pêllos, or pêllas, signifies for; as, por amôr de vôs, for your sake; por séis semánas, for six weeks; palávra por palávra, word for word.

Polo and pola instead of pello and pella, are out

of use.

Por sometimes denotes that the thing is not yet done; as, ésta óbra está por acabár, this work is not

yet finished.

Por, by, for, over, through; as, alcancéi-o por empénho, I obtained it by protection; eu vou por dinhéiro, I am going for money; passéio péllos câmpos, I walk through the fields; por tôdo o reino, all over the kingdom.

When por is before an infinitive, and followed by a negative, in the latter part of the sentence, it is Englished by although or though; as, por ser devota,

or por devóta que seja, não deixa de ser molhér, though she is a religious woman, yet she is a woman; por ser póbre, or por póbre que séja, não deixa de ser sobérba, though she has no fortune, she is nevertheless, or for all that, proud. Here the negative with the verb deixár are rendered into English by the verb to be, and the particles nevertheless, yet, &c. Sometimes the words nem por isso are used before the verb deixár, but the sense is the same.

Por followed by an adjective and the particle que with a verb in the subjunctive mood, is rendered into English by never so; as, por grânde que êlle séja, let him be never so great; por pouco que séja,

never so little.

Por before menos, signifies far less than, or under; as,  $vm^{ce}$  não o terá por mênos de vinte libras, you shall

not have it under twenty pounds.

Por before quanto, with an interrogation, signifies for how much, at what rate? But if there be no interrogation, as in the following and the like sentences, then it is to be Englished by for never so much; as, não o faría por quanto me déssem, I would not do it for never so much.

Por before címa signifies upwards, and before báxo is Englished by downwards; as, o remédio óbra por címa e por báxo, the medicine operates, or works,

upwards and downwards.

Por before pôuco, muito, bem, &c. and followed by que, makes a sort of conjunction governing the subjunctive, and is Englished by if, followed by ever or never so little, much, well, &c. as, por pôuco que erréis, if you do amiss never so little; por bêm que éu faça, if I do never so well, &c.

Por before mim signifies sometimes as for, or for all; as, por mim estou prompto, as for me, or, for my part I am ready; por mim podéis dormir se quizérdes,

you may sleep for all me.

Por, péllo, pélla, &c. denote the efficient cause of

a thing, as also the motive and means, or ways of doing it; in all which significations they are Englished by by, through, out of, at, &c. as,

A Asia foi conquistada por Alexandre, Asia was

conquered by Alexander.

Vôs falláis nísso só por enveja, it is out of envy

only you speak of it.

E'lle entrôu pélla pórta, mas sahío pélla janélla, he got in at the door, but he got out at the window, &c.

Por denotes place, after the verbs ir and passár; as, por ônde iréis vos? which way shall you go?

Eu passaréi por Fránça, I'll go through France;

por ônde passôu elle? which way did he go?

Por construed with nouns without an article, denotes most times distribution of people, time, and place; and it is Englished by a, or every, before the noun; as,

E'lle déu tânto por cabéça, he gave so much a head. Tânto por soldâdo, por ânno, por més, por semâna, &c. so much a soldier, a year, a month, a week; a razão de vinte por cênto, at the rate of twenty per cent.

E'lle péde tánto por légoa, he asks so much a

league, or every league.

Por, between two nouns without an article, or between two infinitives without a preposition, denotes the choice which one makes between two things, alike in their nature, but different in their

circumstances; as,

Cása por cása ântes quéro ésta que aquélla, since I must have one of these two houses, I like this better than that; morrêr por morrêr, melhor hé morrêr combatêndo que fugíndo, when a man must die, it is better to die in fighting than in running away.

Pello méyo is rendered into English by through;

as, pello méyo dos câmpos, through the fields.

Por méyo is rendered into English by by; as, elle alcançou o séu inténto por méyo de astúçias, he has compassed his ends by devices.

Por turno signifies in one's turn.

Por before the infinitives is used instead of para by the best Portuguese writers; and porqué instead of para que; as may be seen particularly in Camoens, Canto 2, Stanza vii. and viii. and in the following example, por naõ, or para naõ repetír o que já témos, díto, not to repeat what we have already said.

Por is sometimes Englished by for, upon the account of, for sake, &c. as, élle fará isto por amôr de vós, he will do this upon your account, or for your sake; deixáraő-o por môrto, he was left for dead; eu ténho-o por méu amigo, I take him to be my friend; tôdos os hômens de bem saő, or estaő por élle, all honest people are for him, or are on his side; por quem me tomáis vós? who do you take me for?

We have already observed, that porqué without an interrogation signifies because; but it has the same signification in the following sentence, and the like; porqué élle hé mentiroso ségue-se que também éu o seja; because he is a liar, does it follow there-

fore that I am one?

Por isto, or por esta razão, signifies therefore.

O porque signifies the reason, the cause, or the subject; as, sábe-se o porque? is it known upon what account?

Por módo de dizér signifies as one may say, if I,

or we, may say, &c.

Por diante signifies before; and por detraz signifies behind.

Por ventura signifies perhaps.

Péllo passádo signifies formerly, in time past, heretofore.

Por nenhúm cáso, by no means.

Por mar e por térra, by sea and land.

Hum por hum signifies one by one.

Por is sometimes Englished by in; as, êlles sao

vinte por tôdos, they are twenty in all.

When the verb passár is followed by por, then the word álto signifies to forget; as, passóu-lhe aquíllo por

alto, he forgot that; but speaking of goods it signifies to smuggle.

Por joined with the verb ir signifies to fetch, and seek after; as, vái por vínho, go fetch some wine; vái

péllo médico, go see for the physician.

Por is commonly used before the substantives; as, por exemplo, for example; por commodidade, for conveniency; por costume, for custom sake; and many others, that may be learned by use.

You must observe, that pello serves for the mas-

culine, pella for the feminine, and por for both.

#### Contra.

X. Contra (against, contrary to) denotes opposition; as, que diz vm^{ee} contra isto? what do you say against this? It signifies also over against, opposite to.

Pró e côntra signifies in English pro and con.

#### Desde.

XI. Désde denotes both time and place, and enumeration of things, and is commonly followed in the sentence by the preposition até (to); then désde denotes the term from whence, and até that of hitherto; as,

Désde o princípio até o fim, from the beginning to

the end.

E'lle fôi a pé désde Windsor até Lôndres, he walked

from Windsor to London.

Eû ténho visto tôdos désde o primeiro ate o último, I have seen them all from the first to the last; fôraõ tôdos mórtos désde o primeiro até o último, they were all slain to a man.

Désde a criação do múndo, from or since the crea-

tion.

Désde o bérço, ou infância, from the cradle, from a child.

Désde já, even now; as, désde já prevéjo, I even now foresee.

Désde agóra, from this time forward. Désde então, from that time ever since.

Désde que, as soon as, when.

Désde quando? how long since, or ago?

Rio navegável désde o séu nascimento; a river navigable at its very rise.

#### Até.

XII. Até signifies till, even, to, &c. as you may see in the following examples.

Até ônde? how far?

Até Rôma, as far as Rome.

Até quândo? till when or how long? Até que éu víva, as long as I live.

Hé hum hómem de tânta bondáde, que até os séus inimígos sao obrigádos a estimálo, he is sogood a man that even his enemies have a value for him.

Até os mais vis hómens tomávaő a liberdáde de, &c. the very worst of men took such a liberty as to,

&c.

Até que, until, till.

Até as orélhas, up to the ears.

Elle vendéo até a camísa, he has sold the very shirt off his back.

Até agóra, or até aquí, till now, or hitherto.

Até aquí (speaking of a place), to this place, hither, so far.

Até lá, to that place, so far.

Até que isto se fáça, till it be done. Até entaő, till then, till that time.

Até is also used before an infinitive; as, gritár até enrouquecér, to bawl one's self hoarse.

Rir até arrebentár pellas ilhárgas, to split one's

sides with laughing.

Dar de comér a alguém até arrebentar, to fill, or cram one with victuals till he bursts.

Até à priméira, till our next meeting, till we meet again.

#### Por cima.

XIII. Por cima (above, over), denotes superiority of place; as,

Morár por címa da alguêm, to live or lodge above

somebody.

A bálla lhe passou por cima da cabêça, the ball went over his head.

Por cima de túdo, upon the whole.

#### Para cima.

XIV. Paracima (above) denotes superiority of age, and is sometimes put at the end of the sentence; as,

E'lles alistárao todos que tínhao de déz annos para eima, they enlisted every body above ten.

#### A cima.

XV. A cima (above) denotes rank, and some moral subjects; as,

A cîma, délle, above him, or superior to him. Estár a cîma de túdo, to be above the world.

Húma molhér que está a címa de túdo, não se lhe dá do que o múndo diz délla, a woman who is above the public censure, don't care what people say of her.

#### Em cima.

XVI. Em cima (upon); as em cima da mésa, upon the table.

Em cima de túdo isto, or only em cima, signifies and besides all that, over and above all that.

#### De cima.

XVII. De cima, when it is an adverb, signifies from above; but when a preposition, it is Englished by from, off, or from off; as,

Tirái aquillo de cima da mêsa, take that from off the table.

Elle núnca tirôu os sêus ólhos de cima délla, he never turned his eyes from her.

Cahir de cima das árvoras, to fall off the trees.

#### Debáxo.

XVIII. The preposition debáxo (under, below, or from under) denotes the time and place; I say the time of a denomination of a reign, or government; as, debáxo do imperio de Augústo, under the empire of Augustus.

Debáxo, as a preposition of place, marks out in-

feriority of position; as,

Tudo o que há debáxo dos céos, all there is under heaven.

Têr hûma almofâda debâxo dos joélhos, to have a cushion under the knees.

Estár debáxo da cháve, to be under lock and key. Debáxo is sometimes rendered into English by upon; as, affirmár húma cóusa debáxo de juraménto, to swear a thing, to declare upon oath.

#### Abáxo.

XIX. This preposition is rendered into English by under, inferior, or next; as assentôu-se abáxo délles, he sat inferior, or under them; as, assentôu-se abáxo de mim; he sat next, inferior to me, or he was next man to me: abáxo del-rêi élle hé o primêiro, he is the next man to the king.

This preposition is sometimes put at the end of the following phrases, de télhas abáxo, here below, in this lower world, de cabéça abáxo, headlong.

#### Fóra.

XX. Fóra (out, without, except, but), denotes exclusion, and exception. It requires generally a genitive before a noun of time, or place; but it governs also the nominative; as,

Fóra do rêyno, out of the kingdom.

Fóra da cidáde, out of town. Fóra de têmpo, out of season.

Procurái-o fóra de cása, look forhim without doors. E'lles sahíraő tödos, fóra dôus ou três, they all

went out except, or but, two or three.

E'lle lhe permite túdo, fóra o ir ás assembléas, he indulges her in every thing, but in going to assemblies.

E'lle tem tôdos os podêres, fóra o de concluír, he has

full powers, except of concluding.

Fóra is sometimes preceded by  $ta\tilde{o}$ , and then it is to be rendered into English by so far; as élle está  $ta\tilde{o}$  fóra de socorrér os séus alliádos, que se declára côntra élles, he is so far from assisting his allies, that he declares himself against them.

Fóra is sometimes rendered into English by besides; as, fóra daquêlles que, &c. besides those that, &c. and sometimes by beyond; as, fóra de medída,

beyond measure.

Fóra de hóras signifies beyond the hour, or very late. Pôr alguém fóra da pórta, or mandár alguém pélla pórta fóra, to turn one out of doors.

## De fornte or fronte.

This preposition governs the genitive, and signifies over against. It is followed by de, do, da, &c. as,

De frônte da sua cása está hum outeiro, over against

his house is a hill.

Eu estáva de frônte délle, I was over against him.

#### Sem.

Sem signifies without; as, Sem dinhêiro, without money, Sem dûvida, without end.

Sem dar a entender, or sem fazer conhecer, without giving to understand.

Sem máis, nem ménos, without any reason or provocation.

Estár sem âmo, to be out of place.

Sem que algúm ácto precedênte póssa derrogár o presente, any former act to the contrary of the present notwithstanding.

Sem governs also the infinitive, which is rendered into English with the participle; as, fallar sem

saber, to speak without knowing.

It is also a conjunction with que, governing the

subjunctive; as,

Enfáda-se sem que lhe dígao náda, he is angry

without any body saying any thing to him.

Nao éra éu já bastantamente infeliz, semque procurásseis de acrescentar a minha infelicidade? was I not miserable enough before, but you must still labour to make me more so?

Lémbro-me sem que me digáis, I remember with-

out your telling.

É'lle virá sem que mândem por élle, he will come without sending for.

## Conforme or segundo.

XXIII. Conforme or segundo (according to, conformable to) govern the nominative, and never the dative as in English: as,

E'lle foi tratado conforme o séu merecimento, he

was treated according to his deserts.

Conforme o méu parecér, in my judgment, in my opinion.

In common conversation conforme is used adverb-

ially, and Englished as follows:

I'sso he conforme, or only conforme, it is as it happens; may be; may be not; that is according,

Confórme a occasião o pedir, according as there

may be need.

### Sobre.

XXIV. Sobre signifies upon; as, sobre a mésa, upon the table; sobre o río, upon the river.

Sóbre túdo, or sóbre tódas as cóusas, over all, above all, above all things, above any thing, especially; as, sôbre túdo tênde cuidado na saúde, but, above all things, mind your health.

Pôr alguém sôbre si, or dár lhe o priméiro lugár,

to place one above himself.

Ir sóbre húma cidáde, to march against a town. Ir sôbre alguêm, to fall, or to rush upon one. Ir sóbre segúro, to go upon sure grounds. Sobre a noite, about or towards the evening. Sóbre o vérde, somewhat green.

Sobre a mínha palávra, upon my word.

Sôbre palávra, upon parole.

Mandár cárta sôbre cárta, to send letter upon letter. E'lle recebéo a cárta sôbre o jantár, he had just dined when he received the letter.

E'lle dôrme sôbre o jantár, he sleeps immediately

after dinner.

Sôbre isto, or sôbre estas côusas, is sometimes Englished by more than that, or besides that; as,

E'lle roubôu-o, e sôbre isto matôu-o, he robbed

him, and more than that, he killed him.

Sôbre que, is rendered into English by though or although; as,

E'ste negócio sôbre que he difficultôso, naohé impossível, altho' this is a hard affair, yet it is not impossible. Sôbre is Englished sometimes by besides; as,

Sôbre as misérias da guerra, elle têve a disgráça, &c. besides the miseries of the war, he had the misfortune of, &c.

Estár sôbre si, or andár sôbre si, signifies to stand

upon one's guard.

E'u vos escreveréi sôbre ésta matéria, I will write to you about this matter.

#### Acerca.

XXV. Acêrca, signifies about, as, acêrca disto lhe disse, about this I told him; acérca de lá ir lhe respondi, about going there I answered him.

Pérto, júnto, ao pé, pegádo.

XXVI. Pérto, (near, by, about) denotes proximity of place and time, and governs the genitive case; as, aquillo está múito pérto do lúme, that is very near the fire; pérto das ôito hóras, about eight o'clock.

Pérto do río, near the river.

Estâmos pérto do Natal, we are near Christmas.

Ao pe requires also the genitive case; as,

Assentáivos ao pé de mim, sit down by me, or near

me; ao pé do río, near the river, &c.

Note, that *junto* (near or by) and *pegádo* (hard by) require the dative case; as,

Júnto a cidáde, near the town.

Pegádo ao palácio, hard by the palace.

## Lônge.

Lônge, far, a great way off, governs the genitive, and the particle de, or do, da, &c. as,

Lônge de cása, far from home. Lônge daqui, far from hence.

De lôngo, or ao lôngo.

This preposition requires the genitive case; as, Ao lôngo da práya, along the shore.

Ao lóngo da cósta, do prádo, &c. along the coast, the meadow, &c.

## Of further Particles.

Aínda, aínda que, pôstoquê or quándo bem, aínda assím, or com túdo.

Aínda signifies yet; as, élle aínda nao véyo, he is not come yet. It signifies also even; as, sería vergônha aínda o fallár nísso, it were a shame even to speak of it; nem aínda por cem líbras, no not for a hundred pounds.

Aínda que signifies, though or although; as, aínda que vós sóis máis vélho do que élle, though you be older than he; aínda que assím fósse though it were

so.

Ainda quê, is very often followed by com túdo, yet for all that; as, ainda que élle não tivésse necessidade disso, com túdo, &c. though he had no need of it, yet, &c.

Aínda assím, or com túdo, is sometimes Englished by nevertheless, or for all that; as, aínda assím sémpre élle foi louvável, he was praise-worthy for all that.

Já désde, já que and já por que.

Já désde is rendered into English by even from; as, já désde o princípio, even from the beginning.

Já que signifies since; as,

Já que isso assim he, since it is so.

The particle que sometimes is not placed immediately after  $j\dot{a}$ ; as,  $j\dot{a}$   $h\dot{a}$   $d\dot{o}us$  annos que  $morr\acute{e}o$ , he died two years since or ago.

Já há muito têmpo qué sahistes de cása, it is a long

time since you went from home.

Já por que, is repeated in the same sentence, and then the first is rendered into English by first, because; and the second by secondly, because; as, já por que éra cégo, já por que éra cóxo, first, because he was blind, and secondly, because he was lame.

## Depôis que.

Depóis que is rendered into English by after; as Depóis que éu tinha entrádo, after I was gone in.

## Com que.

Com que is only a note either of introduction, or

connexion; as,

Com que havía hum hómem enférmo, &c. now a certain man was sick; sometimes they add to it the particle assím, and then it is to be rendered into English by and so.

#### Ou.

Ou signifies or, or either; as, ou bôm, ou máo, either good or bad; máis ou ménos, more or less; ou élle quéira ou não, whether he will or not.

#### Quér.

Quér, when a particle, must be repeated, and the first is rendered into English by either or whether, and the second by or; as, quér élle quéira quér naõ, whether he will or not; quér vós o tenháis feito, quer naõ, whether you have done that, or not.

## Se quér, or ao mênos.

Se quér, or ao ménos, &c. signifies at least, however; as, se vós naő queréis sér por élle naő sejáis se quér contra élle, if you don't choose to be for him, at least don't oppose him; dái-lhe se quér com que sustentárse, give him, however, a subsistence; o nósso priméiro fim hé de livrárnos de tódos os máles, ao mênos dos mayóres, our chief end is to be freed from all evils; at least the greatest.

Nem se quér hum, is rendered into English by never a one, so much, or in the following manner; as, forao todos mortos, e nem se quér hum escapou, they

were all slain to a man.

#### Quândo muito.

Quándo muito (at most, at furthest,) is generally used before the nouns of time and price; as, élle estará aquí déntro em hum méz quándo muito, he will be here in a month at furthest; dez libras quândo muito, ten pounds at most.

#### Tânto.

Tânto, so much, is sometimes followed by cômo, and then it is rendered into English by as well as, as much as, &c.

A'mo-te tânto cômo a mim mêsmo, I love thee as

well as myself.

E'lle tême tânto cômo qualquêr de vôs, que lhe resulte algum dâno, he is afraid of harm as much as any of you.

Cuidéi que a estimásse tánto cômo a si mésmo, I thought he esteemed her, as much as he did himself.

E'lles vem tânto de dia cômo de nôite, they can see

as well by day as by night.

E'u tive tânto cômo vôs, I had as much as you.
O'utro tânto is rendered into English by the double,
twice as much, or as much; as,

Eu alcancéi outro tânto máis por isso, I had as much more for it; êu posso fazér outro tânto, I can

do as much.

Tanto followed by assim, is a particle merely ex-

pletive; as,

Tânto assim que lhe pôsso éu fazêr? how can I help it; váite, tânto assim nao ha náda para ti, go

away, here is nothing for you.

Tanto assim followed by que without an interrogation, is sometimes rendered by so that, in so much that; as, tanto assim que élle nao quér ouvir mais fallar nisso, so that he will hear no more of it.

Tânto máis is followed by que, and Englished by

and the more so as; as,

E'u estou prompto para ir com vm^{ce} hum día déstes à comédia, se vm^{ce} quizér, túnto máis que se déve representár húma nóva peça; I am ready to go with you some day or other to the play, if you'll give me leave; and the more so, as a new piece is to be acted.

Tânto que, or logo que, is rendered into English by as soon as; as, tânto que éu o ví, as soon as I saw him.

Tanto melhor is rendered into English by so much the better.

Tânto is sometimes preceded by com, and followed by que, and is Englished by so, provided that; as com tânto que o façáis, provided that you do it; com tânto que me não fáça mal, so he do me no hurt.

Tanto quanto is Englished by as much as; as,

Tânto quânto pósso, as much as I can.

Taõ.

Tao, so, is generally followed by cômo; as,

Este naô hé taổ bom cômo o ôutro, this is not so good as the other; éu séi ísso taổ bem cômo vós, I know it as well as you.

Taõ is sometimes followed by que, and Englished

by so, such, to that degree; as,

E'lle hé tao prudente que nao tem iguál, he is so wise that he has not his equal; nao sou tao louco que o créya, I am not so simple, or I am not such a fool as to believe it; fáz tao grânde vênto que, &c. the wind is so high that, &c. or the wind blows to that degree, &c.

#### Cômo.

Cômo, is Englished by as, like, how, &c. as may be seen in the following expressions:

Cômo? how?

Dizéime cômo lhe héi de fallar? tell me how I may speak to him.

Cômo assim? how so?

Cômo! what!

Cômo quer que, whereas.

Cômo quer que séja, howsoever, in what manner or fashion soever.

Séja cômo fôr, be it as it will. Cômo isto assim he, since it is so.

Cômo, as it were, or almost.

Cômo se, as if, or even as if; as, cômo se élles tivéssem já vencído, as if they had already overcome.

Cômo tambêm, as well as.

Rico cômo êlle hé, as rich as he is.

Cômo sôis mêu amigo, quero, &c. as (or because) you are my friend, I'll, &c.

Dizêime o cômo, tell me how.

E'u séi cômo fazér para que élle vénha, I know the way I shall take to make him come.

Cômo élle là naõ estéja, éu iréi, provided he is not there, I will come.

#### Assim.

Assim, so, thus, is rendered into English as in the following expressions:

Pôis hé assim de véras? de véras que assim hé, is

it even so? it is even so.

Assím séja, or séja assím, so be it, or be it so.

Assîm hé, it is so.

Para assím dizêr, as it were.

Assím sôu êu lôuco, que, &c. I am not so foolish as to, &c.

Assim Déos me sálve, as I hope to be saved.

Tânto assim, so that.

Assim he que vos, &c. is this your way, &c.

Assim cômo assim, after all, nevertheless, or for all that; as, em vaō dilatais a véssa jornada, assim cômo assim he preciso que vádes, it is in vain for you to put off your journey, you must go thither nevertheless, or for all that, you must go after all.

Assim cômo, as well as, or as soon as.

Básta assím por agóra thus much for this time.

Assím na páz, cômo na guérra, both in time of peace and war.

Assim, assim, so so, indifferent.

Assim queira élle cômo póde, he can if he will.

Assim is sometimes preceded by e; as, e assim que quér isto dizer? how now? what do you mean by this? And sometimes assim is followed by como; as, assim como o sol eclipsa os outros planétas, da mésma sorte, &c. as the sun eclipses the other planets, so, &c.

#### Se.

Se, if; as, se élle vier, if he comes; se me amásses, should you love me; se élle fôsse hómem de hônra, were he but an honest man: se soubéssem quem éu sou, tôdos diriaõ, &c. were it told who I am, every one would say, &c. se he verdade que, &c. if so be that, &c.

The reciprocal verbs, as well as those that are

used impersonally, may have two se se joined together; as, se se for, if he goes away; se se falla misso, if they speak to it.

Se is sometimes rendered into English by whether; and when it is repeated, the second is Englished by

or; as,

Quiséra sabêr se a cúlpa hé nóssa, se vóssa, I would know whether it is our fault or yours.

#### Aliás.

Aliás is sometimes rendered into English by else; as, entrái, porque aliás fecharéi a pórta, come in, or else I'll shut the door; porqué aliás seriaõ os vóssos filhos immúndos, else were your children unclean. And sometimes it is rendered into English by otherwise, in other things, or respects.

#### Embóra.

Embóra is rendered into English by prosperously, auspiciously; but sometimes it is a particle merely expletive, and answers to the Italian pure: as, dizéi muitő embóra o que quizérdes, say what you please: the Italian says, dite pur quel che vi piáce.

Muito embóra séja assim, well, let it be so.

Embóra is sometimes Englished by away; as, váite embóra, go away.

#### Senáõ.

Senão signifies if not, did not, were it not that, but that; as,

Senáő tivésse médo de méu pay, but that I fear my

father.

Se élle nao tivésse vergônha de confessár, but that he was ashamed to confess.

The following expressions, in which they make use of this particle, may be Englished by but, for, and some other variations.

Se não fosse por élle, but for him, or had it not been for him, or had he not been.

Senão fosse por vos, had you not been, or had it not been for you, without you, without your help, hindrance, &c.

Senáo fósse por mim, elle morrería de fóme, were it

not for me, he would starve.

Senáő is sometimes Englished by but: as, nem élles tem ôutro intênto, senáő, &c. nor do they aim at any thing else but, &c.

Ninguém disse assím senáő Cícero, nobody said so

but Cicero.

Senão may be also expressed by máis que in the

following sentence, and the like:

Elle não faz senão jogár, or élle não faz máis que jogár, he does nothing but play.

## Naõ, naõ porquê.

Nao, not, or no, when followed by porqué, is Englished by not that, not but that; as, nao porqué lhe falt sse engénho, not but that he had wit; nao porqué nao fosse jústo, mas porqué, &c. not but that it was right, but because, &c. nao porqué a cousa séja impossível mas porqué, &c. not that the thing is possible, but because, &c.

## Também, or ôutrosi.

Também, or ôutrosi, signifies also, too, likewise; as, vos assím o queréis e éu também, you will have it so, and I too.

#### Para que, porquê.

See the prepositions para and por.

#### Pôis.

This particle is very much used by the Portuguese, and is rendered into English several ways, as in the following examples:

Pôis ide, e vinde lógo, go, then, and come back

presently.

Pôis nao sôu éu capáz de fazello? what, am I not capable of doing it?

Pôis, or pôis entao que quér dizêr isto? Well, and what of all this?

Pôis, or pôis entáõ que héi de fazér? What shall

I do then?

Pôis éu digo que élle está dêntro, why, he is here within, I say.

Pôis porquê me vigiáis? Why, then, do you watch

me?

E'lle tem cabéça; pôis também hum alfinéte a tem,

he has got a head, and so has a pin.

Pôis before naõ, and preceded by an interrogation, denotes a strong assertion, and is Englished by without doubt, yes, surely, to be sure, &c. as, virá élle? pôis naõ! will he come? yes, to be sure.

## A'ntes, or máis depréssa.

These particles are sometimes rendered into English by rather or sooner; as, ântes or máis depréssa quizéra morrêr, I would rather die; ântes quizéra vivêr só que na vóssa-companhía, I would sooner live alone than be in your company. Sometimes ântes is Englished by before; as, I'de-vos ântes que êlle vênha, go away before he comes; ântes que êu môrra, before I die.

Mas ântes, pelo contrário, mas pelo contrário.

These particles are rendered into English by on the contrary, on the other hand, nay; as, mas antes, mas pelo contrario, or pelo contrario isto hé múito differênte, nay, it is quite another thing; mas antes, pelo contrario, &c. élle hé avarênto, nay, or on the contrary, he is a covetous man.

## Para melhór dizêr.

This phrase is rendered into English by nay; as, élle tem já bastânte, ou para melhór dizér, máis do necessário, he has already enough, nay, too much; a isto hé que nós chamâmos diréito das géntes, ou para melhór dizér, da razão, this is what we call the law of

nations, which may be called more properly the law of reason.

#### Que.

We have already observed that que is a particle which most conjunctions are composed of; as, aínda que, although; de sórte que, so that, &c.

The particle que sometimes is the sign of the third persons of the imperative, as let in English; as, que

fálle, let him speak; que ríao, let them laugh.

Que is used between two verbs, to determine and specify the sense of the first, as éu vos assegúro que assím hé, I assure you that it is so; duvido que assím

sėja, I doubt whether it is so or not.

Que is used also after hóra in the beginning of a sentence, and followed by a verb in the subjunctive, to denote by exclamation one's surprise, aversion, and reluctance to something; in which case there is a verb grammatically understood before que; as, hóra que se esquecésse élle de si mésmo! I wonder, or is it possible for him to have forgot himself!

The exclamation, or admiration, is sometimes expressed without any verb; as, que gôsto; e ao mêsmo têmpo, que pêna! how much pleasure and

trouble at once!

Que is sometimes repeated; as,

Que béllos l'ivros que téndes, what fine books you have got; que bélla que hé a virtúde! how beautiful is virtue!

Que is sometimes followed by de; as, que de lôucos ha no múndo! how many fools there are in the world.

Que is used after nouns denoting time, and is sometimes Englished by when or since, &c. and sometimes left out; as,

O día que elle partío, the day when he set out. Quânto témpo há que estáis em Londres? how long have you lived in London?

Ha dez annos que faz a mêsma cousa, he has done the same thing these ten years.

Há dez annos que morréo, he died ten years ago. Que is sometimes rendered into English by because, as in Camoens, canto 2, stanza xvi. que levemênte hum animo, and sometimes by that, to the end that, in order to; as in, ibid. stanza xvii. que cômo vissem, que no rio, &c.

Que before se in the beginning of a sentence, is a redundancy not expressed in English; as, que se vós

dizeis que, if you say that, &c.

Que is used after the conjunction a pénas (scarcely or hardly), and is Englished by but; as, apénas acabóu de fallár, que lógo morréo; he had scarcely

done speaking, but he expired.

Que sometimes is preceded by de sorte, de manêira, de géito, and then it is Englished by so that, in such a manner, insomuch that; as, éu o faréi de sorte que fiquéis contênte, I will do it so that, or in that manner that, you shall be contented.

#### De véras.

De véras signifies in earnest; but sometimes it is Englished by no sure; de véras; naő o pósso crér, no sure!

#### Hóra.

Hôra, or ôra, is an interjection that serves to encourage, as we have seen above; but when it is repeated, it is Englished by sometimes, one while, another while; as, ôra está bem, ôra está mal, sometimes he is well, sometimes ill, élle ôra está de hum parecêr, e ôra de ôutro, he is now of one opinion, and next moment of another. Por ôra, signifies now, for the present.

#### CHAP. VIII.

## OF THE PORTUGUESE ORTHOGRAPHY AND FIRST OF CAPITALS AND STOPS.

I. PROPER names, as well as surnames, always

begin with a capital.

II. The names of nations, kingdoms, and provinces, also begin with a capital; as, Francéz, French; Ingléz, English, &c.

III. All names of dignities, and degrees, and honours, require a capital; as, Réy, Bispo, &c.

King, Bishop, &c.

IV. At the beginning of a period, as well as of

a verse, the first letter is always a capital.

V. The names of arts and sciences, as well as those of kindred, begin with a capital.

## Of Stops.

The use of stops, or points, is to distinguish words and sentences.

The Portuguese have six stops, or pauses, viz.

1. The pônto finál, the same as our period or full stop (.), and is used at the end of a period, to show that the sentence is completely finished.

2. The dous pontos, which is our colon (:), and is the pause made between two members of a period; that is, when the sense is complete, but the

sentence not ended.

3. The pônto e virgula, is our semicolon (;), and denotes that short pause which is made in the subdivision of the members or parts of a sentence.

4. The pônto de interrogaçám, the point of inter-

rogation thus (?).

5. Pônto de admiraçám, the point of admiration,

thus (!).

6. The virgula, the same with our comma (,) and is the shortest pause or resting, in speech, being

used chiefly to distinguish nouns, verbs, and adverbs, as also the parts of a shorter sentence.

The conjunction e, the relative qual, and the disjunctions ou and nem, require a comma before them.

The Portuguesem ake use also of a parenthesis, thus (); but they do not make use of the diæresis, called by their printers *créma* (··); they use also the *ângulo*, thus A, called by the printers *caret*.

The apostrophe, or, as they call it, viracento, is used in this as in other languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy pronunciation, of words, by cutting off an antecedent vowel; as d' ármas, d' élvas, and not dármas, délvas, &c. Although this is allowable in cases wherein, by use, they seem to be one word; as, nésta, néste, désta, dêste, nalgúm, daquélle, nélle, nélla, daquí, dalí, atequí, ategóra; and not em élle, de élle, &c.

## Of the Accents.

The accent is a sound of the voice by which we pronounce some syllables shorter, others longer.

I intend to speak here only of the accents the Portuguese ought to make use of, according to

Madureira, in his Portuguese Orthography.

The Portuguese indeed are acquainted with three accents, but they ought to make use of two only, namely, the acute, which descends from the right to the left ('), and the circumflex, thus (\cdot\).

1. The acute serves to prolong the pronunciation, and is put, according to *Madureira*, on the last syllable of the third person singular of the

future tense; as, amará, lerá, &c.

2. On the penultima of the preterpluperfect tense of the indicative mood; as, amára, ensinára, &c.

3. The acute accent ought to be put also on the penultima of the third persons of the present tense of the verb renunciár, pronunciár, duvidár, &c. thus renuncía, pronuncía, duvida, &c. that they may

be distinguished from the nouns renúncia, pronúncia, dúvida, &c. The same accent is also put on está, nó, to distinguish them from ésta, this, and no, in the.

The vowel o has two sounds, according to the two accents that may be put on it; one open, when it is marked with the acute accent, and is pronounced like o in store; the other close, when it is marked with the circumflex accent, and then is

pronounced like u in stumble.

There are many nouns, both substantive and adjective, which are accented in the singular with the circumflex, and in the plural with the acute; and the adjectives that have two terminations, particularly those ending in oso, osa, must be accented (in the singular) with the circumflex in the masculine, and with the acute in the feminine; as,

Fôgo, fire; plural, fógos. Fórno, oven; plural, fórnos. ôlho, eye; plural, ólhos. ôvo, egg; plural, óvos. ósso, bone; plural, óssos. Pôço, well; plural, péços. Pôrco, hog; plural, pórcos.

Rógo, prayer; plural, rógos. And so fójo, tórno, formoso, sequiôso, suppôsto, pôvo, tôrto, tôrta, copiôso,

&c.

The following keep the circumflex accent in both numbers: bôlo, bôlos; bôjo, bôjos; bôto, bôtos; côco, côcos; chôro, chôros; côto, côtos; fôrro, fôrros; gôrdo, gôrdos; gôsto, gôstos; gôzo, gôzos; lôbo, lôbos; môço, môços; nôjo, nôjos; pôtro, pôtros; tôlo, tôlos; ferrolho, ferrolhos; raposo, raposos; arroz, arrozes; algôz, algôzes, &c.

On the contrary, the following keep the acute accent in both numbers: cópo, cópos; módo, módos;

nósso, nóssos; vósso, vóssos, &c.

When the circumflex accent is put on the  $\ell$ , then the e is pronounced like the French masculine e; but when e is accented with the acute accent, then

the e is to be pronounced like the e open in French, and it is exceedingly sonorous and long. See the

pronunciation of the vowel e.

Nouns ending in az, iz, oz uz, must have the acute accent on the vowel before the z; as,  $rap\acute{a}z$ , a boy;  $n\acute{o}z$ , a walnut;  $alcaç\acute{u}z$ , licorice; but you

must except arrôz, rice; algôz, a hang-man.

Nouns ending in ez generally have the circumflex accent; as mêz, a month; marquêz, a marquis, &c. except the surnames; as, A'lvarez, Antúnez, López, Henríquez, Gonçálvez, Rodríguez, Pèrez, Núnez, Téllez, &c.

# Some Observations upon the Portuguese Orthography.

Both the Portuguese orthographers and best authors vary so much in their rules and ways of writing, that it is impossible for any grammarian to clear up this part of the Portuguese grammar, it requiring no less authority than that of the Royal Portuguese Academy. However, not totally to set-aside so material a part of the Grammar, I shall present the learner with the following observations:

I. When the Latin words from which the Portuguese are derived, begin with a b, the Portuguese likewise must begin with it; therefore you must write and pronounce the b, in the following words, bom, bondáde, bem, bénto, &c. because they are derived from bonus, bonitas, &c. But you must except baínha, bexiga, báirro, which begin with a b, though

they are derived from vagina, vesica, vicus.

II. Likewise if the Latin words begin with a v, the Portuguese words derived from them must also begin with it; as vida, vivêr, varrêr, vêr, vinho, &c.

from vita, vivere, verrere videre, vinum, &c.

Though b ought to be pronounced only by closing the lips, and v by touching the superior teeth with the inferior lips; yet, by a certain affinity between

these two letters, in speaking there is a great confusion in the pronunciation of them in the province of Entre Dôuro e Minho: and this confusion has not been peculiar to the Portuguese language, for Nebrixa says, in his Castilian Orthography, that in his time some Spaniards could hardly make any distinction between these two letters.

III. The p found in some words originally Latin, is changed in Portuguese into a b; as, cabra, cabéllo,

cabéça, &c. from capra, capillus, caput, &c.

IV. The Portuguese generally make use of the y in the following words: ay, réy, fréy, léy, máy,

páy, máyo, méyo, and some others.

Bluteau says, that we must make use of the y in words having a Greek origin; as, sy'llaba, Chrysopéia, pyrámide, poly'gono, hydrographía, hydrópico, phy'sica, hypérbole, hypócrita, Apócrypho, &c.

V. The ph are used by the Portuguese in some words taken from the Greek: as philosophia, philo-

logía, Philadélphia, epitáphio, &c.

VI. The r in Portuguese has two pronunciations, one soft, expressed by a single r as in arádo, a plough; and after the consonants, b, c, d, f, g, p, t; and another hard, in which two rr are used; as in  $b\acute{a}rro$ ,  $c\acute{a}rro$ , &c. But you must observe,

1. That in the beginning of a word two rr must never be used, because then the r is always pronounced hard in Portuguese; as in the words  $r \in mo$ ,

ríco, ródá, &c.

2. When the consonants l, n, s, are before the r, either in a single word, or a compound one, this letter must never be doubled, because then its sound is always strong; as in abalroár, enriquecér, hônra, desregrádo, Henrique, Israelita, &c.

3. The r after a b, is also pronounced hard in compounds with the prepositions ab, ob, sub, and yet is not doubled; as in abrog'ar, obrepção subrepção,

VII. The s is never doubled in the beginning of words, nor after the consonants; therefore you

must write sarár, sabêr, falsamênte, fálso, mânso, &c.

The s is pronounced like z between two vowels, in words derived from the Latin, as well as in those that end in ôsa, and ôso; as músa, cáso, ríso, amorôso, cuidadôso, cása, &c. You must also observe, that cosér, signifies to sew, but cozér signifies to boil or bake.

VIII. Th are generally used in words derived from the Greek; as amphitheatro, atheista, theologo, le-

thárgo, méthodo, &c.

 $T\bar{h}$  is also used in the Portuguese preposition

athé; though some write it thus, até.

IX. When pt is found in Latin words, it must be kept in the Portuguese derived from them; as, ápto, inépto, óptimo, &c. from aptus, ineptus, optimus, &c. The same must be observed in regard to ct.

X. Ch is sounded like k, in words derived from the Greek; as, orchánjo, archidúque, Chrysóstomo, chrysól, chrisólogo, Christóvaő, monarchía, &c. These words must be written with ch, in order to preserve

to the eye their etymology.

Note, that *ch* in words that are not derived from the Greek is pronounced like *sh* in the English words *shawl*, *shoot*, &c. but as some confound the *ch* with the *x*, and begin with *x* those words that should begin with *ch*, I have thought it necessary to make a collection of them.

#### WORDS BEGINNING WITH

CHA.	Chamalóte Chamár	Chançonêta Chanquêta
Chá	Chamaríz	Chantagem
Cháa	Chambaõ	Chantrádo
Cháca	Chamejár	Chântre
Chacina	Chamiça	Chá
Cháço	Chaminé	Chápa
Chacóta	Chamuscár	Chapádo
Chafaríz	Chânça	Chapeádo
Chága	Chancéla	Chapelêta
Chalúpa	Chancelaría	Chapéo
Châma	Chancelér	Chapím

Chapinhár	Chíbo -	Chofrádo
Chapúz	Chícharos	Chófre
Charaméla	Chichárro	Chóldabólda
Charamelêiro	Chichélos	Chóque
Chárco	Chicória	Chorár
Charnéca	Chicóte	Chorrílho
Charnêira	Chífra	Chôrro
Charóla	Chifrár _	Chovêr
Chárpa	Chifre	Chôupa
Chárro	Chilindraõ	Choupâna
Charrúa	Chilrár	Chôupo, or Chôpo
Chásco	Chimbéo	Chourico
Chasôna	Chineár	Choutár
Chatím	Chinchêiro	
Cháto	Chinchôrro	CHU.
Chavaõ	Chinéla	Chica
Chavascál	Chiquêiro	Chúça Chunamál
Cháve	Chíspa	Chupamél
Chaválha	Chispár	Chupár Chuchurriár
Chavêta	Chíste	Chûço
Chavinha	Chíta	Chuço
CHE.		Chunáço
Chêa, or Chéya	CHO.	Chumbár
Chéfe	Chóça	Chúmbo
Chegár	Chóca	Churriaõ
Cheriár, and its de-	Chocalhár	Churúme
rivatives.	Chocalho	Chúsma
Cherívia	Chocár	Chúva
Chérne.	Chocarreár	Chúveiro.
	Chocarrice	Chuveiro.
CHI.	Chôco	CHY,
Chiár	Chócos	
Chibárro	Chocoláte	Chy'pre.
The following	words begin with	ce and not se.

Cea	Cedela	Cegar
Ceádo	Cedénho	Cégo
Ceár	Cedêr	Cegônha
CEB.	Cedílho	Cegúde
Cebôla	Cêdo	Ceguéira
Cebolál	Cédro	CEI
	Cédula	
Cebolínho	13	Ceifa
CED.	CEG.	Ceifaõ
Cedavím	Céga	Ceiraõ
	0	

## PORTUGUESE

198 Ceirínha Centeál Cerração Ceivár. Centésimo Cerrár Centêvo Cerralhêiro Cerrálho Cênto Centóculo Cerrárse CEL. Centopéa Cêrro Celáda Centrál Cérta Celebração Cérto Cêntro Celebrár Cêntuplo Certãa Célebre Centúria Certêza Celéste Centuriaõ Certida Certificár Celestiál Céo Celestrina Cérva CEP. Celêusma Cervál Cêpa Célga Cervêia Cepílho Cervílhas Célha Cêpo Célho Cerviz Céptro Celibádo Cerúda CER. Celibáto Cerúleo Celícola Cérvo Cêra Celidónia Cerzír. Ceraferário Célla Cerbéro CES. Cellêiro Cêrca César Celleirêiro Cercádo Cesaréa Céltas. Cercár Cêsma Cercadôr CEM. Cesmaría Cercadúra Cem Cesmêiro Cérce Cemitério. Cessaõ Cerceádo CEN. Cessação Cerceár Cenáculo Cessár Cercillo Cêno Cêsta Cenóbio Cêrco Cestínha Cerdôso Cenobítico Cestínho Cérebro Cenotáphia Cestêiro Ceréijas Cenôura Cêsto Cenráda Cercijál Cesúra Ceremónia Cenrêira CEV. Ceremoniál Cênso

Ceriêiro

Cérne Cernélha

Ceról Cerôulas

Cerquêiro

Censôr

Censúra

Censurádo

Censurár

Centáuro

Centêna

Céva Ceváda Cevadál Cevadêira Cevadôuro Cevár

Cezaõ

CEZ.
Cezimbar.

N. B. Cerrar signifies to shut, or shut up; but serrár signifies to saw, to cut timber or other matter with a saw.

The following words must have ci, and not si, in their beginning.

	0	0	
CIA.	Cigâno		Cintúra
0.7	Cigárra		Cínza
Ciárse	Cigúde		Cinzênto
Ciática.	Cigurélha		Cinzêiro
CIB.	9		
Cíba	CIL		CIO.
Cibálho	Ciláda		Cío
Cibório.	Cílhas		Ciôso
C100110.	Cilhár		Ciósa.
CIC.	Cilícia		
Cicatríz	Cilício -		CIP.
Cícero	Cilládas		Cipó
Ciciôso.			Cipréste
Olcioso.	CIM.		Cipriâno.
CID.	Címa		1,000
Cidadaõ	Cimálha		CIR.
Cidadaõs	Címbalo		Cirânda .
Cidáde	Cimêyra		Cirandágem
Cidadôa	Cimênto		Cirandár
Cídra	Cimitárra	,	Círco
Cidráda	Címo.		Circulação
Cidraõ			Circulâr
Cidrêira.	CIN.		Círculo
Ciurciia.	Cinca		Circúito
CIE.	Cincár		Circumcidár
Ciência	Cíncho		Circumcisáõ
010110111	Cínco		Circumferência
CIF	Cincoênta		Circumspécto
Cifár	Cingidôuro		Circumspécçaõ
Cifra	Cingír		Circumstância
Cifrár.	Cíngulo		Circumstântes
	Cinnamômo		Círio
CIG.	Cinta		Cirurgîa
Cigâna	Cintillár		Cirurgiao

#### PORTUGUESE

Cirzír	CIT.	Cível	
cis.	Citação Citádo	Civíl Civilidáde.	
Ciscár Císco	Citár	CIU.	
Císma	Citeriôr	Ciúme	
Cismatico	Cíthara	Ciúmes.	
Cîsne	Citharêdo	CIZ.	
Cisterciênse	Citríno	Cizânia	
Cistérna	civ.	Ciziraō.	

200

XI. No Portuguese word begins with co; but, according to Madureira, there are some that begin with ca, and ca; as capato, capateiro, cargaco, capateiro, cargaco, capateiro, cargaco, capateiro, cargaco, capateiro, cargaco, capateiro, capateiro,

The g is used after p in those Portuguese words that have in their Latin root pt; as  $descripça\~o$ , ac-

cepção, &c. from descriptio, acceptio, &c.

## Of Double Letters.

It is to be generally observed, that the consonants are doubled in those Portuguese words, whose Latin roots have likewise the same double consonants; as accelerár, accénto, occidénte, &c. from accélero, accentus, occidens, &c. affligár, affluéncia, affirmação, &c. from affligo, affluentia, affirmatio, &c. as will be seen in the following collection;

#### B

Is to be doubled in abbade, abbaciál, abbadía, abbadéssa, abbreviatúra, abbreviar, and some others.

#### C

Is to be doubled in the following words, and some of their derivatives.

Abstracção	Acçentuár	Acceitação
Acçaő	Accepção	Acceitador
Accênto	Acceita	Acceitár

Accessão Accessível Accésso Accessório Accidentál Accidênte Acceleráda Accelerádo Accelerár Acclamação Acclamár Accommodação Accomodádo Accommodár Accumulação Accumuládo Accumulár Accusação Accusádo Accusadôr Accusár Accusatívo Adstrícção Afflicção

Báccho Bôcca Boccáça Boccadínho Boccádo Boccál.

Attracção.

Circumspécçaõ Coacçaõ Cocçaõ Collecçaõ Constricçaõ Construcçaõ Contracçaõ Correcçaõ Decocçaõ Deducçaõ Desjecçaõ Desoccupação Desoccupár Detracçaõ Dicçaõ Diccionário Direcçaõ Distrácçaõ

Eccêntrico
Ecclesiástico
Erecção
Evicção
Exacção
Extracção

Fácçaõ Fícçaõ Frácçaõ

Impeccabilidade·
Impeccável
Inaccessível
Indicçaõ
Indúcçaõ
Infécçaõ
Infracçaõ
Inspecçaõ
Instrúcçaõ
Intellécçaõ
Interjécçaõ
Intersécçaõ
Introducçãõ.

Manuducção

Objecçáõ Obstrucçáõ Occasiáõ Occasionár Occáso Occidentál Occidênte Occíduo Occisão Occurrêr Occultamênte Occultádo Occultár Occúlto Occupação Occupádo Occupár Occurrência Occurrênte.

Peccádo
Peccadôr
Peccadôra
Peccânte
Peccár
Predicção
Preoccupár
Producção
Projecção
Profecção
Putrefacção.

Rarefacção Recondacção Refecção Refracção Reseccação Restricção

Satisfacção Seccár Sêcco Secção Seccúra Sôcco

## 202 PORTUGUESE

Soccorrêr	Successível	Transacçác
Soccôrro	Successôr	Tradacçãõ
Subtracção	Succintamênte	3
Succedêr	Succinto	
Successão	Súcco	Vácca
Succésso	Succôso	Vaccáda
Successivo	Súccubo.	Vaccum.

#### D.

This letter is doubled in the following words: addição, addicionádo, addicionár, additamento, additár.

#### F

### Is to be doubled in

Affabilidáde	Affeminádo	Affirmádamênte
Affável	Affeminárse	Affirmadôr
Affadigádo	Afferrádamênte	Affirmár
Affadigár	Afferrádo	Affistulárse
Affagado	Afferrár	Affixár.
Affagár	Afferretoádo	
Affágos	Afferetoár	
Affamádo	Afferrolhádo	Afflamárse
Affamarse	Afferrolhár	Afflicçaõ
Affastádo	Afferventádo	Afflicto
Affastár	Afferventár	Affligír
Affazendádo	Affervorádo	Affluência 🖁
Affazêrse.	Affervorár.	
		A (P . 17
		Affocinhár
Affeádo	Affiádo	Affogádo
Affeár	Affiár	Affogadôr
Affeamênto	Affidalgádo	Affogár
Affectádamênte	Affidalgárse	Affogamênto
Affectádo	Affigurádo	Affogueádo
Affectár .	Affigurár	Affogueár
Affécto	Affilháda	Afforádo
Affectuôso	Affiladôr	Afforadôr
Affeição	A ffilár	Afforár
Affeiçoádo ,	Affinádo	Afforamênto
Affeiçoár	Affinár	Afformentár
Affeite	Affincádo	Afformoseádo
Affeitár	Affincār	Afformoseár.

#### GRAMMAR.

Diffusamênte Affoutádo Affugentár. Affoutár Affumádo Diffúso Affoutêza Affumár Effectivamênte Affôuto. Affundádo Effectivo Effêito Affundárse Affundírse Effeituár Affracár Affuzillár. Efficazmênte Efficácia Afframengádo Efficáz Affreguesádo Diffamádo Efficiênte Affreguesárse Diffamár Effigie Affrônta Differênça Affrontádo Differençár Affrontamênto Differenças Affrontár Offendér Differênte Affrontósamênte Offerecér Differêntemênte Affrontôso Offuscár. Diffícil Affroxádamênte Difficuldáde Affroxádó Suffócár Difficultár Affroxar. Suffrágio, and some Difficultósamênte

G.

others

#### This letter is to be doubled in

Aggravânte	Aggressôr	Exaggerár
Aggravár	Exaggeração	Suggerír
Aggravádo	Exaggeradôr	Suggestaõ
Aggrávo	Exaggerádo	Suggerido.

Difficultôso

Diffusaõ

L.

#### Is to be doubled in

Affugentádo

Acafelladúra	Allegação
Acafellár	Allegádo
Acallentádo	Allegár
Acallentár	Allegoría
Acapelládo.	Allegórico
	Allegorisár
	Allelúia
Affilládo	Alliviár
Affilladôr	Allucinação
' Affillár.	Allucinár
	Acafellár Acallentádo Acallentár Acapelládo Affilládo Affilladôr

## PORTUGUESE

Alludír Bacelláda Cavallêiro Allumiár Bacêllo Cavállo. Allusao. Barbélla

Barrélla.

Cebôlla Amantelládo Cebollál Cebollínho Amaréllo Bélla Amarellecêrse Chancellér Béllamênte Amerellidaõ Chancellaría Béllo Amolládo Célla Bellêza Cellêiro. Amollár Belleguím Amollecêr Béllico Amollecído Bellicôso Clavellína

Amollentár Bellígero Belluíno.

Codicíllo Cólla Annullação Búlla Colládo Annullár. Bullário. Collár Collêira

Colláção Appellação Calliope Collaterál Appellânte Camillo Collécçaõ Appellár Cavillacaõ Collécta Appellidár Cavillósamênte Collectivo Appellído. Caballina Collectôr Cadélla Colléga Cadellínha

Aquélla Colléga
Aquélla Cadellínha Collegiáda
Aquélle Cállo Collegiál
Aquelloutro Camartéllo Collégio
Aquíllo Cambadélla Colligár
Cancélla Colligír

Capélla Colly rio
Arméllas Capellaõ Cóllo
Arrepelládo Capelláda Collocação
Arrepellaõ Capellanía Collocár
Arrepellár Capêllo Collóquio

Capillár

Castélla
Atropelládo Castéllo Compellír
Atropellár. Casúllo Compostélla
Casúlla Constellaça

Casulla Constellaça
Caválla Corrollário
Avillanádo. Cavallaría Covêllo

	GRAMM.	A R. 20
Courélla	Encelleirár.	Gabélla
		Galládo
	•	Galladúra
Délla	Equipollência	Gallár
Déllas	Equipollênte.	Gallêgo
Dêlle	1 1	Gállia
Dêlles		Gallicádo
Degolládo	Escabellàdo	Gallicár
Degollação	Escabéllo	Gállico
Degollár	Escudélla	Gallínha
Degolladôuro.	Escudellaõ	Gallinháço
8	Estillação	Gallinhêira
	Estilládo	
Distillação	Estillár	Gallinhêiro
Distilladôr	Estillicídio	Gallinhôla
Distillár.	Estrêlla	Galliópoli
.D. Milliuz.	Estrelládo.	Gallióta
	Libriciiado.	Gallíza
Donzélla.		Gállo
	Excellência	Gamélla
	Excellênte	Gazélla.
Duéllo.	Expellír.	
Dueno.	Possier	
		Gólla
Ebulliçaő.	Fálla	
mouniguo.	Fallácha	
	Fallácia	Hellespônto
E'lla	Falladôr .	Hendecasy'llabo
E'llas	Fallár	Hollânda
E'lle	Fallecêr	Hypállage.
E'lles	Fallecído	71 8
Elléboro		
Ellípse -	Fallência	Janélla
Ellíptico.	Fallído.	Janellêira
Empireo.		Janellínha
	Ferdizêllo.	Jarméllo.
Emolliênte	refuizeno.	
Emollir.		
Emoni.	771 114	Illação
	Flagellânte	Illaqueár.
Enalláge -	Flagéllo.	Illatívo
Encapelládo	22	Illegítimo
	Fólle	Illéso
Encapellár Encapelláda	Follículo	Illiçar
Encastelládo		
Encastellár	Fontéllo.	Illiciadôr

#### PORTHGHEGE

200	PORTUGU	ESE
Illícitamênte Illícito Illocável Illudído Illudír Illuminaçaö Illuminádo Illuminár Illuminát Illuminát Illusaö Illúso Illustraçaö Illustrar Illústre Illustríssimo Illy'rio Imbélla Impellír Incapilláto	Mirandélla Miscellânia Mólle, Mollèira Mollèza Mollice Mollida Mollificânte Mollificár Mollinár Monosy'llabo.  Nélla Nélla Néllas Nélle Nélles Nigélla Novélla	Pélle Pellesínha Pellíca Pellícula Panélla Pimpinélla Phíllis Pollegáda Pollegár Pollez Polluçaő Pollúto Polysy'llabo Portacóllo Portélla Postílla Pousafólles Prunélle Pulmélla
Incapilláto Infallível Inintelligível Intervállo.	Novélla Novelleiro Núlla Nullidáde Núllo Nuzellos.	
Libéllo	/	

206

Lordêllo Lousélla.

Marcélla Marcellína Marcéllo Martelláda Martellár Martéllo Martellínho Malfallânte Mallográdo Mamillár Medúlla Mellífluo Méllo Metállico

Millenário

Millésimo

Pálla Palládio Pallante Pállas Palliádo Palliár Pallidêz Pállido Pállio

Odivéllas

Ouguélla.

Ollaría Ollêiro

Paradélla Paralláxe Parallélo Paraléllogrâmo Quartélla.

Rabadélla Rebelládo Rebellaõ Rebellárse Rebelliaõ Rélla Rodofólle Rodopéllo Rosélla Ruélla.

Sélla Selládo Selladôr Sellagaõ Sellár

	C 20 22 212 212 22	~
Sellêiro	Tôlla	Vassállo
Sêllo	Tollíce	
Sentinélla	${f T}$ ôllo	
Siby'lla	Torcicóllo	Velleidáde
Sigillo	Tranquillidáde	Vellicação
Sigilládo	Tranquillo	Vellicár
Sobrepelliz	Trélla	Véllo
Sugillação	Trisy'llabo	Vellôso
Syllaba	Tunicélla	Vellúdo
Syllabático	Túllio	Verdesélla
Syllábico		
8yllogisár		
Syllogismo.	- Vacillação	Vílla
	Vacillânte	Villanía
	Vacillár	Villaamênte
Tabélla	Válla	Villaõ
Tabelliaõ	Valládo	Villaõ
Tabelliôa	Vallár	Vitélla
Titillação.	Válle	Vitellino.
Titillár	Vassallágem	

N. B. Annullar signifies to annul; but annular is an adjective, and signifies annular, or in the form of a ring. L is doubled by some in the words pelo, pela, (for) thus péllo pélla.

#### M

#### Is to be doubled in

Accommodár	Commúm	Emmudecêr
Commemoração	Commungár	Engommár
Comménda '	Communicár	Epigrâmma
Commensurár	Communidáde	Flâmma
Commentár	Commutár	Flammânte
Commerciár	Consummár	Flâmmula
Commettár	Desaccommodár	Gêmma
Comminação	Descómmodo	Gômma
Commiseração	Dilêmma	Grammática
Commissaõ	Emmadeirár	Immaculáda
Commissário	Emmadeixár	Immanênte
Commoção	Emmagrecêr	Immarcessível
Cómmodo	Emmanquecêr	Immateriál
Commovêr	Emmassár -	Immatúro

Immediátamênte Immortificádo Mâmma Immemorável Immóvel Mammár Recommendár Immênso Immudável Immúndo Immensurável Immobilidáde Immunidáde Sommár Immoderádamênte Immutável Súmma Incómmodo Immodésto Summário Immódico Incommunicável Summidáde Immolar Incommutável Symmetria, and some Immortalisár Inflammár

N. B. M, and not n, is always made use of before b, m, p.

#### N

Is likewise doubled in several verbs compounded with an, en, in, con, as, annelar, annéxa, annaõ, annata, annél, A'nna, ânno, annular, connéxaõ, connéxo, depennár, empennár, ennastrár, ennegrecêr innáto, innavegável, innocência, manná, Marianna, pánno, pénna, when it signifies a pen, tyránno, and some others.

#### Ρ.

This letter is to be doubled in words beginning with p compounded with the Latin prepositions ad, ob, sub; as, apparáto apparecér, oppôr, opprimír suppôr, Philippe, pôppa, &c.

N.B. Pappa signifies pap, or a sort of spoon-meat

for children; but pápa signifies the Pope.

#### R.

The r is doubled in such words as are strongly pronounced in the middle; as guérra, arrancár arredár arrimár, arruinár, carregár, cárro, &c.

#### S.

The s is to be doubled in the Portuguese superlatives, because it is doubled in the Latin roots; it is also doubled in the following words:

Abbadêssa	Assaltár	Nósso
Condêssa	Asséyo	Nóssa
Àssár	Assessôr	E'ssa
Assanhár	Assím	E'sse
Assegurár	Assistír	I'sso
Assignár	Assombrár	O'sso
Assolár	Assoprár	Passeár
Accésso	Assobiár	Passár
Aggressôr	Assustár	Reméssa
Appressár	Atravessár	Ingrésso, and many
Amassár	Necessitár	others.
	****	

T

T is doubled in the following words and their derivatives:

Attemperár	Attribuír	Permittír
Atténção	Attribúto	Promettêr
Attendêr	Attriçãõ	Remettêr
Attentár	Attrito	Remettír
Attenuação	Commettêr	Sétta
Attenuár	Demittír	Settênta
Attónito	Enfittár	Settecêntos
Attracção	Fítta	Transmittír
Attractivo	Intrommettêr	

Omittír

Nísso

# OF THE QUANTITY OF SYLLABLES AND THEIR SOUND.

Of Words that make their Penultima in a.

N. B. Observe what we have said above con-

cerning the accents.

Arremessár

Attrahír

All words ending in ábo, ába, áco, áca, ácho, ácha, áço, áça, ádo, áda, áfo, áfa, ágo, ága, ágem, ágre, álho, álha, álo, ála, have the penultimas long; as, diábo, mangába, macáco macáca, caváca, mingícho, garnácha, madráço, linháça, amádo, punháda (except relâmpago, antropófago, lévado, and cágado, which are short in the penultima), abáfo, abáfa, saramágo, adága (except stômago, or estômago, âmago, amáraco, which

are short), trabálho, toálha, badálo (except anómalo, búfalo, escándalo, which are short), tanchágem, vinágre.

Words ending in âmo, âma, ânho, ânha, âno, âna, have their penultimas long; as, escâmo, courâma, castânho, arânha, engâno, pestâna; except pâmpano,

ty'mpano, bigamo.

Words ending in ápo, ápa, áque, áro, ára, have their penultimas long; as, guardanápo, solápa, basbáque, empáro, seára; except cántaro, pácaro, láparo báfaro, lúparo, pífaro, pícaro, cámera, támara, pássaro, Lázaro, bárbaro, cócaras, &c.

Words ending in árro, árra, áto, áta, ávo, áva, áxo, áxas, make the penultima long: as, bizárro, bizárra, biscáto, pataráta, escrávo, escráva (except

concava, and bisavo), cartáxo, tarráxa.

# Of Words that make their Penultima in e.

All words ending in êbo, êba, êdo, êda, êfa, have their penultima long; as, mancêbo, mancêba, azêdo, azêda, sanêfa.

Words ending in éfe are long; as, magaréfe: as well as those ending in éco, éca, éço, éça; as bonéco,

bonéca, cabéço, cabéça.

Words ending in égo, éga, are long; as, morcégo, socégo, relégo, entréga, alléga; except cônego, tráfego, côrrego, sôfrego, pêcego, félego, bútega, cócegas

Words ending in éjo, éja, élo, éla, are long; as, caranguéjo, bocéjo, igréja, Alentéjo, envéja, martélo,

queréla.

Words ending in êmo, êma, êno, êna, are long; as, suprêmo, postêma, acêno, açucêna; except apózema.

N. B. the penultima is short in the word ingreme. Words ending in épo, épa, épe, éque, éro, éra, are long; as, decépo, carépa, julépe, molèque, sevéro, sevéra, tempéro (when a noun): and tempéro (when a verb), except áspero, próspero.

Words ending in êso, êsa, êzo, êza, êto, êta, ête, êvo, êva, êve, are long; as, acêso, acêsa, desprêzo,

grandéza and despréso (when a verb) entremêto, galhêta, ramalhête, bofête, atrêvo, atrêva, atrêve.

Of Words that make their Penultima in i.

Words ending in ibo, iba, ibe, icho, icha, iche, ico, ica, iço, iça, ice, ido, îda, ifo, ifa, ife, have the penultima long; as, estribo, arriba, arribe, esguicho, esguicha, azeviche, panico (a sort of stuff), botica; except mecánico, ecuménico, círtico, político, pánico, (panic), and some others borrowed from the Greek and Latin. In Iço, iça, &c. as, roliço, preguiça, velhice, marido, medida; except húmido, pállido, hórrido, and some others derived from the Latin. In ifo, ifa, &c. as borrifo, alcatifa, patife.

Words ending in igo and iga, are long; as, amigo,

amiga, except, pródigo, pródiga.

Words ending in ijo, and ija, are long; as, afflijo,

artemija.

Words ending in *ilho*, *ilha*, are long; as, *atilho*, beatilha. Others ending in *ilo*, *ila*, as, gorgomilo,

perfila, desfila.

Words ending in imo, ima, have the penultima long; as, optimo, cadimo, esgrima, lastima (when a verb); except lástima (when a noun), Jerónimo, péssimo, and all the superlatives, anónimo, and some others.

Words ending in inho, inha, ino, ina, ipo, ipa, ipe, have the penultimalong; as, constipo, constipa, Euripo, acipipe. Others in iquo iqua, ique, iro, ira, ire; as, iniquo, iniqua, lambique, retiro, mentira, suspire.

Words ending in iso, isa, izo, iza, ito, ita ivo, iva, ixo, ixa, are long in the penultima; as, aviso, camisa, juizo, ajuiza, altivo, altiva, prolixo, prolixa, apito, cabrito; except púlpito, vómito, decrépito, espírito, débito, and some others.

Rules for such words as make their penultima in o.

Words ending in ôbo, ôba, ôbe, ôbra, ôbro, ôbre,

have their penultima long; as, lôbo, lôba, arrôba, arrôbe, glôbo, alcôva, ôbro, ôbra, côbre, côbro, dô-bro.

Words ending in ôcho, ôcha, ôco, ôca, ôço, ôça, ôdo, ôda, ôde, ôso, ôsa, ôse, have the penultima long; as, agarrôcho, garrôcha, carôcha, biôco, except allíloco) massarôca, minhôca, almôço, môça (a girl), môça, or môssa (a notch), almôço (when a verb), carrôça, lôdo, bôda, bôde, pôde (the third person singular of the present indicative of the verb podér), pôde (the third person singular of the same verb), galhôfa, bôfe.

Words ending in ofro, ofra, ofre, are long; as,

alcaxófra, cófre, enxôfre.

Words ending in ógo, óga, ógue are long; as, affógo, affóga, affógue, desafógo when a verb, and desafógo, when a noun.

Words ending in  $\delta jo$ ,  $\delta ja$ , have the penultima long; as,  $desp\delta jo$ , when a verb,  $n\delta jo$ ,  $desp\delta jo$ , when a noun.

Words ending in ólo, óla, óle, are long; as, vióla, gallinhóla, bóla, engóle, miòlo, bólo, rebólo, tôlo, cebóla; except pérola, frívolo, benévolo, malévolo.

Words ending in ômo, ôma, ôme, have the penultima long; as, mordômo, redôma, fóme, except Thomé.

Words ending in ônho, ônha, ôno, ôna, have the penultima long; as, bisônho, risônha, dôno, atafôna, dôna; except altisono, and unisono.

Words ending in *opla*, *opo*, *opa*, *ope*, *opro*, *opra*, *opre*, *oque*, have the penultima long; as, *manopla*, *tôpo*, *tôpa*, *galope*, *assôpro*, when a verb, *assòpra*, *as*-

sópre, assôpro, when a noun, botóque.

Words ending in *óro*, *óra*, *óre*, are long in the penultima; as, *penhóro*, *penhóra*, *penhóre*, *chóro*, when a noun; *chóro* when a verb; except *bácoro*,

rémora, pólvora, árvore.

Words ending in orro, orra, are long; as, soccorro, morro, cachorra; and some others ending in oso, ose, osa, ozo, ozo, as, primoroso, primorosa, industrioso, industriosa, ciózo, cióza, descose.

Words ending in *ôto*, *ôta*, *ôte*, have their penultima long; as, *gôto*, *gôta*, *bôta*, *devôto*, *frôta*, *capôte*, *garrôte*.

Words ending in ôvo, ôva, ôve, are long in the

penultima; as, ôvo, concóva, apróve.

Words ending in ôxo, ôxa, are long in the penultima; as, rôxo, rôxa, pintarrôxo.

Rules for such Words as make their Penultima in u.

Words ending in úbo, úba, úbro, úbra, úcho, úcha, úco, úca, úço, úça, make the penultima long; as, adúbo, adúba; except súccubo, íncubo, and some others; incúbro, incúbra, machúcho, embúcha, cadúco, cadúca, rebúço, embúça.

Words ending in údo, úda, úde, úfo, úfa, úfe, úgo, úga, újo, úja, have the penultima long; as, felpúdo, felpúda, almúde, pantúfo, adúfa, adúfe, sanguesúga,

caramújo, azambúja.

Words ending in úlho, úlha, úlhe, úlo, úla, úle, úmo, úma, úme, únho, únha, únhe; as, bagúlho, borbúlha, entúlhe, engúlo, engúla, bulebúle; except vocábulo, vestíbulo, ângulo, régulo, opúsculo, trémulo, patíbulo, thiríbulo, and some others; consúmo, consúma, cardúme, testemúnho, testemúnha, empúnhe.

Words ending in úno, úna, úne, úpo, úpa, úpe, úque, úro, úra, úre, are long in the penultima; as, desúno, fortúna, desúne, apúpo, apúpa, apúpe, estúque, madúro,

madúra, apúre.

Words ending in úso, úsa, úse, úzo, úza, úze, úto, úta, úte, úxo, úxa, úxe, have the penultima long; as, parafúso, parafúsa, parafúse, redúzo, redúza, redúze, condúto, labúta, enxúta, labúte; except cômputo when a noun; repúxo, empúxa, empúxe; and some others ending in úvo, úva, úve; as, viúvo, viúva, enviúve.

N. B. When the penultima is immediately fol-

lowed by another vowel, observe that,

A before e must be accented with the acute ac-

cent, and pronounced accordingly; as, sáe, cáe: but before i it has no accent.

A before o must be pronounced and accented thus bacalháo; but when the relative o is added to the third person singular of the present indicative, then a has no accent; as, ama-o.

E before a is accented thus, baléa; and sometimes with the acute, as assembléa, idéa, and some others; and sometimes has no accent at all, as in

gávea, fêmea, and some others.

E before o is exceedingly sonorous and long, as in chapéo, coruchéo; except páteo, férreo, plúmbeo,

aureo, argênteo.

I before a, e, o, is long; as, dizia, fazia, almotolia; except such as are borrowed from the Latin; as, néscia, comédia, féria, sciência, prudéncia, and sábia when an adjective, &c. I before o and e, is long; as, desvie, desvio; except vicio and some others.

O before a is accented thus, corôa, tôa, môa, esmôa.

O before e is long in the words dóe, móe, róe, and in the verb sóe when it signifies to be wont; but when it signifies to sound, it is to be accented thus, sóe.

U before a is long; as, rúa, charrúa; except

mellíflua, ínsua.

U before e and o is long; as, conclúo, recúo, conclúe, recúe; except mellifluo, and some others derived from the Latin.

#### CHAP. IX.

Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin

THE Portuguese retains so great an affinity to the Latin, that several words of the latter are preserved in the former, by only allowing a small alteration; as may easily be seen in the following observations:

1. The o of the Latin words is preserved in some Portuguese ones; some Latin words are entirely preserved in the Portuguese; as, hospede, córda, pórta, &c.

2. The u is changed into o; as, forca, goloso, estopa, mosca, amámos, &c. from furca, gulosus,

stupa, musca, amamus, &c.

3. The diphthong, au, is frequently changed into ou; as, louvável, ôuro, côuve, môuro, &c. from laudabilis, aurum, caulis, maurus, &c.

4. The e is preserved in several Portuguese words; as, cérto, sérvo, érva, térra, férro, &c. from

certus, servus, herba, terra, ferrum, &c.

5. The e takes the place of i; as, enférmo, séco, &c. from infirmus, sicus, &c.; and the i is sometimes preserved, as in indígno, benígno, &c. from indignus, benignus, &c.

6. The b is also changed into v; as, árvore, duvidár, devér, estáva, amáva, &c. from arbor, dubitare,

debere, stabat, amabat, &c.

7. The c is very often changed into g; as, digo, agúdo, amigo, migálha, &c. from dico, acutus, amicus, amica, &c.

8. Cl is changed into ch; as, chamár, cháve,

from clamare, clavis, &c.

9. When the c in Latin is followed by t, this

letter is changed into  $\varsigma$ ; as,  $ac\varsigma a\~o$ ,  $dic\varsigma a\~o$ , &c. from actio, dictio, &c.; and sometimes the e before t is changed into i; as, f'eito, l'eito, n'oite, l'eite, p'eito, &c. from factus, lectum, nocte, lacte, pectus, &c. Finally, both the c and t are preserved in a great number of words; as, 'acto, 'affl'eto, 'affl'eto, 'affl'eto, &c. from actus, 'affl'etus, 'affletus, 'affletus

10. The d is often lost; as, roér, excluír, ráio,

&c. from rodere, excludere, radius, &c.

11. The f is frequently preserved; as in filho, fazer, fervor, formoso, &c. from filius, facere, fervor,

formosus, &c.

12. The g is changed into i; as, réino, from regnum. Sometimes it is quite lost, as in dédo, frio, sétta, sinál, bainha, &c. from digitus, frigus, sagitta, signum, vagina, &c.

13. The h is placed instead of the l; as, alho, from allium. Sometimes it is added; as, artilho, alhéo, fólha, consélho, &c. from articulus, alienus,

folium, consilium, &c.

14. The *n* is sometimes added, and sometimes taken off; as, *máncha*, *ilha*, *Salitre*, *espôso*, from

macula, insula, sal nitrum, sponsus, &c.

15. The mn is preserved by many Portuguese writers in the words alumno, calumnia, columna, damno, solemne, somno, from alumnus, calumnia, columna, damnum, &c.

16. The double nn of the Latin is preserved in several words; as in ánno, innocência, innocuo, innavegável, innovár, connéxo, &c. from annus, innocentia, innocuus, innavigabilis, innovare, connexus, &c.

17. The gn and gm are preserved in several Portuguese words; as in augménto, fragménto, enígma, benígno, dígno, indígno, ignomínia, &c. from augmentum, fragmentum, ænigma, benignus, dignus, &c.

18. The e and the i after n are sometimes changed into h; as in arânha, vinha, Hespânha, castánha, &c. from aranea, vinea, Hispania, castanea, &c.

19. The p is changed into b; as in cábra, cabéllo, cabéça, &c. from capra, capillus, caput, &c. Sometimes pl is changed into ch; as, chága, chôro, chúva, &c. from plaga, ploro, pluvia, &c.

20. The q is changed into g; as, iguál, alguém, antígo, ágoa, águia, &c. from equus, aliquis, antiquus,

aqua, aquila, &c.

21. The t is likewise changed into d; as, ca déa, fádo, ládo, nadár, piedáde, &c. from catena, fatum, latus, natare, pietas, &c. The ti of the Latin is sometimes changed into ça, and sometimes into ci; as in gráça, clemência, paciência, &c. from gratía,

clementia, patientia, &c.

N. B. All these alterations are not general in all the words, but are used in several; and on some occasions the Latin word is preserved without any mutilation or variation. And as it would be endless to pretend to shew all the affinity between the Portuguese and the Latin, I shall only observe, that they sometimes add, and sometimes take off letters from the Latin roots; as in fácil, débil, finál, materiál, estrépito, estómago, expectadór, especulár, &c. from facilis, debilis, finalis, strepitus, spectator, &c.

# PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR.

### PART III.

#### CONTAINING

The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language.

II. Such Words as are most used in Discourse.

III. A Collection of the choicest Portuguese Proverbs.

IV. Familiar Dialogues.

# The different Significations of andar, to go.

ANDA'R a pé
Andár a cavállo
Andár pélla pósta
Andár em cóche
Andár á véla
Andár pélla bolína
Andár pára diánte
Andár para tráz
Andár a trás de alguém

Andár ás apalpadéllas

Andar com témpo

To go on foot
To ride on horseback
To ride, or go post
To ride in a coach
To sail
To sail with a side wind
To go forward
To go backward
To go behind, or after one,
also to follow, to press,
to solicit a person
To grope along, to grope,
or feel one's way
To go with the times

Andár pejáda

Andár sahída

Andár perdído Andár de pé

Andár com hônra A'nda A'nda para diánte Andár de esguélha Andár de mal para peór

Andár de réixa com alguém -

Com o andár do têmpo Andár de galópe Andár em côrpo

A'nda o múndo as avéssas Andár espalhádos Andár trabalhándo nalgúma óbra Andár de gatínhas Andár de cócoras Andár dizéndo To be with child, or big with child

(speaking of a bitch) To be proud

To go astray

To be sickish, but not bed

To act like an honest man

Go on

To go sideling

To fall out of the fryingpan into the fire

To bear one a grudge, to have a spleen against him, to owe him a spite

At long run To gallop

To be in cuerpo, or to be without the upper coat or cloak, so as to discover the true shape of the cuerpo or body

The world is come about

To lie about

To be about some piece of work

To go crawling
To go on one's breech
To publish or report

# The different Significations of dar and dar-se.

Dar Dar a entendêr Dar fé

Dar or vendér fiádo
Dar á luz
Dar senhoría
Dar tu, or fallár a alguén
por tu
Dar-se,a partido, or langár-

se no partido de alguém

To give, to strike
To make one believe
To credit, to believe, also
to perceive, to descry, to
take notice, to smell out
To sell upon credit
To publish
To my-lord a man
To thee and thou one

To side with one, to be for him

To promise

To cuff

To butt, as rams do

To give a thrust

To smell out a matter

Dár palávra Dar húma sálva

Dar fiadór Dar princípio, or fim Dar cónta Dar-se ao estúdo Dar em que fallár

Dar entráda Dar cáusa Dar que em entendêr

Dar de bebér
Dar côuces
Dar hum coscorráõ
Dar pancádas
Dar múrros
Dar murrádas
Dar o fáro a alguém de algúma cóusa
Dar húma estocáda
Dar os bons días
Dar á cósta
Dar com alguém

#### Dar em alguém

Dar cúrtas
Dar sobre o inimígo
Dar os parabéns
Dar os parabéns a alguém
da súa chegáda
Dar a maő ajudándo
Dar a escolhér
Dar enfádo a alguém
Dar no álvo
Dar as cóstas

Dar parte de hum negócio

to make a discharge of guns in honour of some persons of quality To bail To begin, or end To give an account To apply one's self to study To make one speak, to give an occasion to be talked To give access to To give cause To vex one sadly, to trouble one To give drink To kick To give a box on the ear To beat with a cudgel

To give a volley of shot, or

To bid one good-morrow
To give in keeping
To run a-ground
To meet with one by
chance, to light upon a
person
To strike one, also to accuse one
To deal, or give the cards
To fall upon the enemy
To congratulate
To bid one welcome

To give a helping hand
To let one take his choice
To molest one
To hit the mark
To run away, to betake
one's self to flight
To impart a business

Dar péllo amór de Déos Dar húma súrra Dar húma vólta em redóndo Dar húma vísta de ólhos Dar alcánce ao que se dezéja Dar suspíros Dar ouvídos

Dá cá Déu-me húma dór Dar que fazér a alguém, or occupár álguém

Dar em rôsto

Dar hóras
O relógio dá hóras
Dar a álma a Déos
Dar comsigo em algúma
parte
Dar leíte
Dar garróte
Dar vózes
O sol dá nos ólhos

Dar razôens
Dar comsigo no chao
Dar frúto
Dar as maos
Dar com a pórta na cára
de alguém
Dar com a pórta nos ólhos
a algúma côusa (metaph.)
Dar préssa
E'sta travéssa vai dar á

rúa larga

Não sabe aonde ha de dar com a cabéça I'sto vos ha de dar na cabéça Dar com a cabéça péllas parédes

Déi no pensamento de, &c.

To give for God's sake
To beat one soundly
To walk a turn
To cast an eye on
To obtain, or compass one's
wish
To sigh
To give hearing
To upbraid, to cast in the
teeth
Give hither

I was taken with a pain
To employ one, to set him
at work, to set him upon
some business
To strike

To strike
The clock strikes
To give up the ghost, to die
To cast one's self into a
place, or to go to a place
To suckle
To strangle
To cry out, to bawl
The sun shines in one's
eyes

To debate, or contend
To fall upon the ground
To bear fruit
To shake hands
To shut the door upon one

To slight, to despise a thing

To press, or hasten
This lane strikes, or goes
into the broad street
It came into my head to,
&c.
He does not know which
way to turn himself
The mischief will light upon

your own head
To beat one's head against
the wall

Dar em tôdos, or dizêr mal de tódos

Dar bôa cônta de si

Dar a conta E'u daréi cônta disso E'lle déu em ir áquélle lug ár Dar em dróga Dar em ridicularías

Dar húma fíga a alguém

Dar-se por culpádo

De nenhúma sorte vos dêis por entendído, or achádo Dar-se por aggravádo Dar-se por satisféito Dar-se por vencido

Dar-se por desentendído

Quándo se dér a occasiáõ

Dar-se préssa Elle déu-se a tôda a sórte de vícios Naõ se me dá dísso Que se vos da a vós dísso? Pôuco se me dlphaNaõ se lhe dá morrér E'lles daő-se múito bem

E'sta cárne nao se dá bem comígo

To have a satirical virulent tongue, to spare nobody To give a good account of himself, to behave cleverly

To pay an account I'll be answerable for it He began to use that place To grow a mere drug

To grow, or become ridiculous

To flirt at one, to fig, to give the fico

To acknowledge one's self guilty

Take no notice of any thing

To make a shew of anger To rest satisfied

To submit, to surrender one's self a prisoner, or to yield a point

To feign one's self ignorant, to take no notice of any thing, to make as if one saw or knew not

When occasion shall require

To be in haste, to make haste He gave himself over to all manner of vices I mind it not

What have you to do with it? I care but little

He does not fear death They agree mighty well together

This meat does not agree with me

Of the different Significations of the Verb estar.

We use the verb estár to make an action of repose, by putting the verb that follows in the gerund; as, êlle está escrevêndo, he is writing:

Estár has several other significations; as,

Estár em pé Estár bem, or mal Estár asseniádo Estár para sahír, para fóra

Estár com o sentido em Fránça, or estár com o sentido em outra parte

Está múito bem Está para chovêr Estár para cahír Estár para morrér Estár em dúvida Estarémos a vér

Estár com huma maő sőbre a *ôutra* 

Estár em cása Aquilo não me está bem

 $Estár\ dormíndo$ Estár fazéndo Estár de nôjo Estár álérta Estár de sentinélla Está alégre  $E^{\prime}$ lle está cômo querEstár em perígo Estár encostádo Estár esperándo Estár múito témpo Estár caládo

Estár or vivér com butros

Estár de cima  $Estcute{a}r\ debcute{a}xo$ Estár bem aviádo Estár á espéra Estár enamorádo Estár de câma

Estár no câmpo Estár com saúde, or saúde

Estár quiéto Estár neutrál

Estaréi por túdo o que vos parecer máis conveniente

To stand upright To be well, or ill To be sitting To be just going out

To have one's wits a woolgathering

It is well, it is very well It is going to rain To be ready to fall To be like to die To be in doubt We will expect the issue To stand idle

To stay at home That does not become me

To lie sleeping To be a doing To be in mourning To look heedfully about To stand centry To be merry He lives in clover

To be in danger To lean upon To expect To stay a good while To be silent

To dwell with others

To lie over To lie under

To be in an ill taking

To lie in wait To be in love To be bed-rid

To live in the country

To be in health

To stand still, or to be quiet To stand neuter I shall stand to whatever you shall think proper

A difficuldade esta em, &c.

Estár por alguém

Estár por, or em lugár de, &c.

E'lle estáva na altúra do Cábo de Bôa Esperánça Eu nao quéro estár as ra-

zoens comvôsco

Está quânto quizéres Aônde estáis de cása?

Estaréi péllo que dissér a pessôa que for de vosso mayor agrádo

Não podémos estár por isso Não quéro estár pella vóssa senténça

Cômo está vmª?

The difficulty consists in, &c.

To stand for one, to be of his side

To stand for, or signify

He stood off the Cape of Good Hope

I won't stand, or dispute with you

Stay as long as you please Where do you live?

I'll refer it to whom you please

We can't stand to that I wonttake your judgment

How do you do, sir?

Estár, joined with the infinitive of a verb and the particle para, signifies to be ready, or about doing a thing, which has always reference to the signification of the verb; as

Estôu para ir Estôu para comprár hum cavállo

Estóu para cazárme E'sta cása está para cahír Estóu para dizér Estár com a hôca ahérta

Estár com a bôca abérta (metaph.)

Estár de regimênto Estár fiádo em alguém,

Eslár no fúndo
Estár de frónte
Estár em competência
Estár ao lúme
Eslár de lónge
Eslár álto

Estár á maő diréita de alguém

I am going, I am ready to go I am about buying a horse

I am going to be married This house is ready to fall

I dare say
To stare, tolook, to hearken
attentively

To keep to a diet

To trust to, to rely or de-

pend upon one
To lie at the bottom
To lie over-against

To stand in competition

To stand by the fire To stand at a distance

To stand high, or in a high place

To be at one's right hand, to have the first place

Elle estêve em perigo de afogárse

Não estár no cáso de, &c.

Estár a órdem de alguém Isso naő está nos térmos Naő estőu no cáso Estár ás razôens

Estár bem com alguém

Estár bem
Bem aviádo estaría éu, se,
&c.
Estár emconcéito de hómem
honrádo

Estár de pósse

Estár na fé

Deixái estár ísso. Estár em si Estár fora de si Deixavos estár (a sort of threatening) He was like to be drowned

Not to be able, or in the case of, &c.

To be at one's disposal.

That is not right, it won't do
I don't understand the case
To contend, to strive, or
quarrel

To be in favour with one, to live in friendship with him To be well, to be at ease It would be very bad for me, indeed, if, &c.

To be looked upon as an

honest man
To believe, to think, or sup-

pose
To possess, to have the pos-

session of a thing
Let that alone
To be in one's right wits
To be out of one's wits

I'll be revenged on you, you shall pay for it

We have already observed the difference between ser and estar. See page 55.

Of the different Significations of fazer and fazer se.

Fazér signifies to do, to make, to create; also to form of materials; also to feign, to seem, to make as if.

Elle fez que nañ o vía Fazér huma saúde E'lle lhe fez cortár a cabéça

Fazér pé atráz (metaph.)

Que téndes vos que fazér com isto

He made as if he didnot see it To drink, or to to asta health He caused his head to be cut off

To fall, or draw back, to give ground; to yield, to submit

What have you to do with it? or what is that to you?

Fazér brío de algúma cóusa Fazér fim ao dezéjo

Fazêr por algúma côusa

Fáço por isso
Fazér ao negócio, or ao cáso
Fazér esmólas
Fazér gásto
Fazér gósto
Fazér o gósto, or a vontáde
a alguém
Fazér parallélo
Fazér de comér
Fazér fúmo
Fazér auzénte a alguém
Faz frío

Naő façáis cáso disso
Fazér agoáda
Isto me faz vir a ágoa á
bóca
Fazér álto
Fazér cása (in playing at
backgammon)
Fazér a céa
Fazér cáras
Fazér enrédos

Fazér zombaría de alguém

Fazér carráncas Fazér cáso

Fazér génte

Fazér em pedáços

Fazér de trípas coração Fazér múitocáso de algúma cóusa Não fáço cáso délle Fazér festa Fazér húma festa

To satisfy one's desire, or longing To take pains, to endeavour, to labour to a certain purpose, to work for a certain end I endeavour after it To come to the purpose To give alms To spend To like, to be pleased with To please one, to comply with one's desire To parallel, to compare To cook To smoak To believe one absent It is cold To raise men, soldiers To pull into pieces To mock, or to laugh at a person Do not mind that To take in fresh water This makes my teeth, or mouth, water To halt in a march To put two men on the same point To get supper ready To make mouths To form a secret design against another To pout To make account of, or esteem To make one's utmost efforts

To make great account of a

To give an entertainment,

I don't mind him

to feast

To endear, to fondle

thing, to make much of it

To make a pride of a thing,

to glory in it

Fazér as vézes de alguém

Fazér trapáças

Fazér lugár Fazér mercé Fazér ouvídos de mercadór Tér que fazér Fazér exercício Fazér exercício (a military word)

Os soldádos estáŏ fazêndo exercício Que fazéis aquí?

Fazér hum vestído Fazér húma léy, hum discurso

Fazér guérra
Fazér sabér algúma cóusa
a alguém
Fazér enraivecér alguém

Fazér húma cônta Fazér cônta

E'lle fazia húma cônta, e sahío-lhe ôutra Fazer contas com alguem

I'sso náö me faz náda

Fazér páusa Fazér de alguém tólo Fazér dinhéiro de algúma cóusa Tornár a fazér Fazér a razaö Ter que fazér com alguém

Fazér a alguém hum gilváz na cára Fazér hônra Fazér fé

Fazér fórte Fazér mençáö Fazér mal To make any business for another

To chicane, to cavil, to use tricks

To make room
To grant a favour

To make as if one were deaf

To be busy To use exercise To exercise

The soldier's exercise

What do you here?
To make a suit of clothes
To make a law, a speech

To make war
To make one acquainted
with a thing
To make one mad
To cast up an account
To intend, or to propose
He was much disappointed

To settle accounts with one

It is nothing to me, that does not concern me
To make a stand

To make a fool of one
To make money of a thing,
to sell it

To make again
To pledge one

To deal with one, or to have to do with one

have to do with one To mark one in the face

To honour
To make known, to testify,
to witness
To fortify, or strengthen
To mention
To hurt

Fazér de alguém o que húma pessóa quer Fazér húma apósta Faz vénto Faz hője öuto dias

Fazêr vída com alguém

Fazér a súa vontáde Fazér o possível

Nao faréis náda com ésso Nao façáis máis assím Se tornárdes a fazér assím Dezéjo que fáça a súa fortúna

Custou-me muito a fazellovir

Fazér a butrem o que quizéramos que butrem nos fizésse a nos

Nao ténho que fazér comísso

Fazér o que alguém mánda Faz de mim o que vos parecér

Fazérhum gránde estróndo E'lle fói o que fez túdo naquélle negócio Que faréis hóje?

Fazer o seu cúrso

Fazêr húma bôa cása

Fazér a bárba
Fazér a cáma
Naō séi que lhe fazér
Fazér gránde negócio
Fazér o seu officio
Fazér profissaō
Tôdos o faziaō mōrto

Fazér vir

To dispose of one

To lay a wager

The wind blows
This day se'nnight, or a
week ago
To cohabit, or dwell together
To do as one pleases
To do one's best, or endeavour to do one's utmost
You will do no good in it
Do so no more
If ever you do so again

I wish he may do well

I had much to do to get him to come

To do by others as you would be done by

I have nothing to do with it

To do as one is bid
Do with me as you shall
think fit
To make a great noise

He was the do-all in that business

What will you do to-day?
or how do you employ
yourself to-day?

To finish its course as a star does

To raise, to set up one's family
To shave

To make the bed
I can't help it
To drive a great trade
To exercise, or discharge

To profess
They gave out that he was

dead To call, or send for Fazér entrár, ou sahír alguém l'sto naŏ faz náda Naŏ séi que fazér disso Ja naŏ tênho que fazêr com élle

Fazér hum lívro Fazér amizáde com alguém

Fazér exémplo em alguém, or castigállo para dar exémplo Fazér húma côusa múito

ao desentendído

Fazér das súas

E'lle sempre está fazéndo das súas Fazér fóscas

Fazér de pessóa Fazér jurár alguém

Fazér saltár, or voár péllos áres Fazér bóa vezinhánça

Fazér lénha Fazér a rônda Fazér dívidas

Fáz lua Fazér violéncia Fazér-se ao trabálho

Fazér-se tôlo Fazér-se vélho

Fazêr-se fêio

To call in, or out, to bid one come in, or out
It is no matter
I have no need of it
I have done with him

To write a book
To make friendship, to get
into friendship with one
To make one a public example

To do a thing very covertly, so that people can't apprehend that it is done on set purpose, and with a design

To play the fool, to dodge, to play tricks

He is always playing his foolish tricks

To bully, to provoke, to excite by words, or actions of contempt; also to elude, or deceive by false show

To behave courageously
To tender the oaths to one,
to put one to his oaths
To blow up

To keep fair with one's neighbours
To fell wood
To walk the rounds
To run in debt, to contract debts
The moon shines
To offer violence
To inure one's self to hard-

To inure one's self to hardships

To play the ninny
To grow old, or to grow in
years

To grow ugly

Fazér-se sobérbo Faz-se tárde To grow proud It grows late

Fazér-se signifies also to feign, to pretend, to seem, make as if.

Faz-se môuco

He won't hear

The different significations of têr and têr-se.

Ter que fazér Ter ódio Ter por costúme Ter alguém por ignoránte Ter cuidádo de Ter cuidádos

Ter fastío

Ter ánimo
Ter bóa fáma
Ter cára d'aço
Ter necessidáde
Ter préssa
Ter múitos fúmos
Ter gránde presúmpçaő

Ter razaō Naō tér razaō Ter algúma côusa debáxo da língua To be busy To hate To be wont

To believe one ignorant
To be careful of

To be full of care, or thoughtful

To loath, to see food with dislike

To have courage
To be well spoken of
To have a brazen face

To be in want To be in haste To be very proud

To presume much on one's self

To be in the right To be in the wrong

To have a thing at one's tongue's end

Ter algúma côusa na pônta da lingua, we say, to have a thing at one's finger's ends, to have it perfect. They also say, sabêr algúma côusa nas pôntas dos dêdos, which answers exactly to our English phrase.

Ter feiçõens feiticéiras Ter má fáma Ter ciúmes Ter méyos Ter no pensamênto Ter obrigação Ter mêdo Ter razão, e máis querazão

To have a taking look
To be ill spoken of
To be jealous of
To be able, or have means

To bear in mind To be obliged To be fearful

To have reason, to spare

Que têndes vos com isso? Ter carruágem e criádos

Ter a alguém suspénso Hómem que tem bôa feiçaö

Ter mésa fránca

Ter frío Ter as cóstas quêntes com alguêm, Ter por bem Ténho-o por dôudo Ter maő na sua resolução Ter com que Nao téndes de que vos queixár -Naõ téndes que, &c.

I'sto nao tem náda que fazér, com o que éu dígo Ter éntre mass

Ténho isso por cérto Ir ter com alguém Vênho ter com vm^a para sabér cômo pássa a senhôra fullána Ir ter a algúm lugár E'sta rua vái ter ao mercádoTer alguém por si

Têmos por nós a authoridade dos máis prudêntes Ter para si

Ter em múito Ter em pôuco Ser tido em bôa cônta

Ter maö

What is that to you? To keep a coach and servants

To hold one in suspence A man of good address, a polite man

To keep open table, to keep a table where a man may come without bidding

To be cold

To be backed, or supported by one

To approve of, or consent I take him to be mad To be still in one mind To have wherewith

You have no reason of complaint

It is useless, or it will be to no purpose for you to, &c. That is nothing to the pur-

pose To have in hand, or in one's possession

I hold that for a certainty To address one's self to one I address, or apply myself to you to know how Miss such a one does

To go to a place This street strikes, or goes into the market

To be supported, or protected by one

We have the wisest men of our side, or of our opinion To think, or imagine, to

reckon To set much by

To value but little

To be esteemed, regarded, or valued, to be in great

To hold or keep in, to restrain

Ter mas nalgúma côusa

A'tomos que tem maö huns nos butros Ténha maö, or tem maö Ter Ter-se em pé Ter-se bem a cavállo

Ter-se em cása Ter-se com alguém To bear up, to support, to prop, to keep up, to hold up

Atoms that stick together

Hold, stop
To contain
To stand, to stand up
To sit fast, or well, on
horseback

To keep at home
To hold out, to resist, to
stand against one, to cope
with one, to oppose, or
resist him

Naö me pósso ter com ríso I can't forbear laughing Naö se póde ter, que naö He can't forbear speaking fálle

The different Significations of querer.

Querér signifies to will, to be willing, and to believe: as

Quérem algúns Querér bem Querér mal A'ntes querér Quéira Déos

Mas quéro que assím séja Que quer dizér aquelle hômem? Que quer dizér ísto?

I'sto quer dizér que, &c.
E'u quéro absolutamenteque
E'u assím o quéro
E'lle quer que vos obedeçáis
Nao quéro
E'lle o fará quándo quizer

E'lle quer partir amanhaā,

O mal que éu lhe quéro me, vênha a mim Some believe
To love
To hate
To have rather
God grant it, God send it
may be so
I grant it, suppose it were so
What does that man mean?

What means this? what's the meaning of that?
The meaning is that, &c.
I positively resolve that, &c.
I'll have it so
He will have you obey
I will not, I won't
He will do it when he pleases or when he has a mind to it
He intends, or has a mind, to set out to-morrow
I wish him no more harm than I do myself

Havêr, to have.

Tu has de hir
E'lle ha de vir hôje
Se êu houvêr de hir
Aíndaque isso me houvêsse
de custar a vída
E'lle está tôdo nú, e ha de
têr múito frío
Havéis vós de estár em
cása?
Eu hái de gehárme lá

Eu héi de achárme lá E'lle ha de sér enforcádo Eu héi de recebér dinhéiro Vós he que havéis de jugár Aquillo he que vós havieis

Aquillo he que vos havieis
de fazér
Havér por bem
Havér por mal
Que ha de ser
Aquíllo núnca há-de ser
E'u héi de ser a cáusa da
súa mórte, ou rúina
Parahavér de fallár, ouvír,

Que há de sér de mim? Havér filhos

Lívros do déve,e ha de havér Havér mistér Há mistér apressár-se You must go
He is to come to-day
If I shall be obliged to go
Though I were to lose my
life for't
He is all naked, he must

He is all naked, he must be very cold Shall you be at home?

I must be there
He is to be hanged
I am to receive money
You are to play
You should do that

To take in good part
To take in ill part
That is to be hereafter
That will never be
I shall be the death, or ruin
of him
In order to speak, hear, &c.

What is to become of me? To beget, to become the father of children.
Books of debtor and creditor To want
It is necessary to haste, or to make haste

 $Hav\acute{e}r$ , when impersonal, is rendered into English by the verb to be, preceded by there; as,

Há
Há hómens taö malvádos
Havía húma molhér
Há algúns bons e outros
máos
Há muitas cásas
Há algúma cousa de novo?
Há máis he húma hóra
Há múito témpo
Há pérto de húma hóra que
élle sahío

There is, or there are
'There are men so wicked
There was a woman
There are some good, and
some bad
There are several houses
Is there any news?
It is above an hour since
Long since
It is almost an hour since
he went out

Há hum ánno Há ôuto días Há pérto de 20 légoas da quí lá Não há E'lle cúida que nao há máis que purgár

Havêr se, v. r.

E'lle sábe cômo se há-de havér, or élle sábe cômo ha de havér-se

Elle houve-se de manéira que, &c.

A year ago Eight days ago

It is near upon 20 leagues thither

There is not

He believes that purging is all in all, or that purging is the only remedy in such a case

To carry, to behave one's self

He knows how to behave himself

He behaved himself in such a manner that, &c.

N. B. When this verb is used impersonally, it is always followed by the particle de; as,

Ha-se de mistér dinhéiro Ha-se de fazér, or dizéristo Ha-se de fazér o que élle quizér

Money is wanted
This must be done, or said
People must do what he
pleases

Hir, a neuter and irregular verb, to go, to walk, to march; also, to grow, to reach any estate gradually, to be going.

Hir por már e por térra Cómo vaö os vóssos negócios?

Túdo vái bem As súas côusas vaő múito mal

Hir á máö

Hir passándo Hir andándo

Hir andando, or passando

Que vái de nôvo ? Que vái nísto ? or ônde vái ísto a dar comsígo ? To travel by sea and land How go your concerns?

All is well, all goes well Things go very ill (or very hard) with him

To hinder, to obstruct, to obviate

To grow out of fashion or use
To go on or forward, to
keep or hold on his way;
also to proceed, to continue on, to prosecute

To shift, to pass life not quite well, to live though with difficulty

Is there any thing new? What of all this?

Hir debáxo
Hir para
Quánto máis vámos para a
primavéra, máis comprídos sáo os días
Hir de mal para peór
Hir diánte
Hir por diánte
Hir ao encôntro
Hir e vir

Náö fáço máis do que hir e
voltár
Isso ja lá vái
Eílo lá vái
Eílo vái
Que vos paréce daquélla
molhér? eílo vái élla náö
he féa
Eílo vái, fólga que assím
seja
Cómo as cóusas agora vaö

Por que párte ides? Déos vá comvôsco

Hir á róda do múndo Hir com alguém E'sta travéssa vái ter á rúa lárga E'u o iréi vér de camínho

Hir continuándo o séu caminho Hir fóra do séu caminho Hir hum de húma bánda, e óutro da óutra Hir para tráz Hir detráz Hir atráz de alguém Hir em alcánce de alguém

Hir buscár Hir para déntro To come by the worst
To approach, to go near
The nearer the spring, the
longer the days

To grow worse and worse
To go before
To go on, or forward
To go to meet
To sink, or fall to the bottom
To go to and fro, to go and
come
I will not stay, I shall be
back presently
"Tis a thing past and done
There he goes
So so, pretty well
How do you like that woman? She is so so, she
may pass
Well, well, I am glad on't

As things go now, as the
world goes
Which way d'ye go?
The Lord of heaven go
with you
To go about the world
To go along with one
This lane goes into the
broad street
I will call upon him as I go
along
To go along

To go out of one's way To go asunder

To go backward
To go behind
To pursue, to go after one
To go after one, in order to
overtake him
To go for, or fetch
To go in

Hir para fóra
Hir peregrinándo
Hir fazér húma embaixáda
Hir ver, cantár, &c.
Hir fazér hum negócio
Hir com a maré
Hir par a par com alguém
Vái para quátro méses que
éu aqui cheguéi

I'de em paz O témpo vai abrandándo Hir (at cards) Hir-se, v. r.

Hir-se a ólha, ou a panélla Hir-se o enférmo A quarésma vúi-se acabándo Hir-se

Náda se vái máis depréssa que o têmpo Aquélles môntes váő-se estendêndo Hir-se embóra Esperái até que a cálma se va embóra Vái-te embóra; que náõ sábes engodár a génte Hir-se de húma carta (at cards) Vái-se fazéndo tárde Vái-se chegándo a nôite Vái-se chegándo o têmpo da séga Vai-se acabándo o méu consulado

Hir-se escapulíndo

Hir-se á máõ

To go out
To go a pilgrimage
To go on an embassy
To go to see, to sing, &c.
To go upon a business
To go with the tide
To go cheek by jole with one
It is now going on four
months since I came
hither

Depart in peace
The weather grows mild
To go, to lay, to stake, to set
To go, to go away, to go
one's way, to depart, also
to run, or leak
Is for the pot to boil over

Is for the pot to boil over Is for a sick man to die Lent draws to an end

To slip, or pass away (as time)

Nothing goes faster than time

Those mountains extend, or stretch themselves. To go away, also to be over Stay till the heat be over

Away, or go, you know not how to wheedle people To throw away a card

It grows late
The night draws on
It grows near harvest

My consulship is almost at an end To sneak away To refrain, to forbear, to abstain

Hir-se impersonal; as, vái-se, they go; foi-se, they are gone; hir-se há, they shall go.

# To pray.

Senhôr, cómo amigo, fáçame o favôr Eu vos péço, or péçovos

Péçolhe em cortesia Péçolhe encarecidamente

Péçolhe por favôr que, &c. Fáçame a finêza Péçolhe perdaõ Dear sir, do me the favour

I pray you I beseech you

I intreat, or conjure, you to do it

I beg of you that, &c. Do me the kindness I beg your pardon

# Expressions of Kindness.

Mínha vída Mínha álma Méu amór Méu querído, mínha querída Méu coração Fílho do méu coração Fílha da mínha álma My life
My dear soul
My love
My little darling
My dear love, my love
My dear child
My little honey

# To shew Civility.

Agradéço a vmª
Dou a vmª as agradecimentos
Béijo as maos de vmª
Fálo-héi com tódo a gósto
Com tódo o méu coração
De múito bóa vontade
Véja vmª se o pósso servír
nalgúma cóusa
Dispónha vmª cómo lhe
parecér déste séu criádo
Estóu esperândo péllas órdens de vmª
Ja que vmª assím ordena

Quer vmª que éu fáça algúma côusa Sem ceremónia Náōtem vmª máis quefallar Fáçame a honra de me pôr aos pés da snrª

Fíco múito obrigádo a vmª

As órdens de vmª

I thank you I give you thanks

I kiss your hand
I will do it cheerfully
With all my heart
Heartily, willingly
See if it is in my power to
serve you
Do what you please with
your servant
I wait for your commands

Since you will have it so
At your service
I am very much obliged to
you
Have you any thing to command me
Without ceremony
You need but to speak
Present my respects, or
duty, to my lady

Não séi cômo agradecér a vmº tántos favôres

Nao sou de comprimentos Deixemos estes comprimentos I'sso he o melhor I know not how to make a proper return for so many favours

1 am not for ceremonies Away with these ceremonies or compliments That is the best way

To give tokens of Affirmation, Consent, Belief, and Refusal.

He verdáde He isso verdade? He múito verdáde Para dizérvos a verdáde Com efféito he assím Quem duvida disso? Nao ha dúvida nísso Parèceme que sim, que nao Apósto que sim Apósto que naõ Crêame vma? Está vmª zombándo? Fálla vm" de véras? Fállo de véras Pôis, está féito Pôuco a pôuco I'sso nao he verdáde Nao ha tal côusa He mentira Estáva zombándo Séja múto embóra Nao quéro

It is true Is it true? It is but too true To tell you the truth Really it is so Who doubts it? There is no doubt of it I think so, not I lay it is I lay it is not Do believe me? Don't you jest? Are you in earnest? I am in earnest Well, let it be so Softly, fair and softly It is not true There is no such thing It is a lie I did but jest Let it be so I won't, I will not

#### To consult.

Que se ha de fazér?
Que farémos?
Que lhe paréce a vmª que
éu fáça?
Que remédio tem ísso?
Façámos assím
Façámos húma côusa
Será melhór que
Sería melhór que

What is to be done?
What shall we do?
What do you advise me to
do?
What remedy is there for it?
Let us do so, and so
Let us do one thing
It will be better that
It would be better that

Esperái hum pôuco Deixáime com isso Antes quizéra Se isso fósse comígo Túdo he o mêsmo Stay a little
Let me alone
I had rather
Were I in your place
It is all one

# Of Eating and Drinking.

Ténho fóme
Môrro de fóme
Cóma vmª algúma côusa
Que quer vmª comér?
Quér vmª comér máis?
Ténho séde
Ja matéi a fóme
Ténho múita séde
Môrro de séde
Dême de bebér
Víva vmª múitos ánnos
Eú bebería hum cópo de
vinho

Eú bebería hum cóp vinho Pôes béba vmª Ténho bebído bastánte Naõ pósso bebér máis Ja matéi a séde I am hungry
I am almost starved
Eat something
What will you eat?
Will you eat any more?
I am dry, or thirsty
I have no more stomach
I am very dry
I am almost dead with thirst
Give me some drink
I thank you
I could drink a glass of wine

Drink then
I have drank enough
I can drink no more
I am no more thirsty, or my
thirst is quenched

# Of Going, Coming, Stirring, &c.

Dônde vem vm^a?
Para ônde vái vm^a?
Vénho de; vôu para, or a
Quer vm^a subír, ou descér?

Entre vm², faya vm²
Naö se búla daquí
Chégue se para mim
Va-se vm²
Vem cá
Espére por mím
Naö vá taö depréssa
Tíre-se de diante de mim
Naö me tóque
Deixe estár ísso
Estőu bem aquí
A'bra vm² a pôrta

From whence do you come?
Where do you go?
I come from; I am going to
Will you come up, or come
down?
Come in, go out
Do not stir from hence

Come near to me
Go your way, be gone
Come hither
Stay for me
Do not go so fast
Get you out of my way
Do not touch me
Let that alone
I am well here
Open the door

Féche a pórta A'bra, ou féche a janélla

Vénha vm^e por aquí Pásse por lá Que procúra vm^e? Que perdéo vm^e? Shut the door
Open the window, or shut
the window
Come this way
Pass that way
What do you look for?
What have you lost?

## To wish well to a Person.

O Céo vos guárde Déos vos dé bôa fortúna Dezéjo-vos tódo o bem

Déos vos ajúde Déos vos perdóe I'de com Déos Até vér-nos Bóm provéito fáça a vmª Heaven preserve you
God send you good luck
I wish you every thing that
is good
God assist you
God forgive you
God be with you
Till I see you again
Much good may do you

#### To wish ill.

O diábo te léve Maldíto séjas tu Vái para os quíntos inférnos Váite enforcár Enforcádo séjas tu The devil take thee
A curse on thee
Away, go to hell
Go and be hanged
Would thou wert hanged

## To swear.

Assim Déos me sálve

Arrebentado séja éu Em conciéncia As God shall help me, shall save me May I burst In my conscience

## . To threaten and insult.

O'lha que te héi de dar Déixa-te estár, or cála-te que me has de pagár Júro que te faréi arrependér disso Se me enfadáres Coitádo de ti Póucas razõens, or cala éssa bóca I'sto basta Take care, I will beat thee Thou wilt pay it me

I swear thou shalt repent of it
If you put me into a passion
Woe be to thee
Hold your tongue, don't speak to me
It is enough, it is sufficient

# To mock, to blame, and to call one names.

Que bélo focínho!
Que cára de môno!
Trapacéiro
Embustéiro
Mexeriquéiro
Que bélo sogéito
Velháco
Maróto
Má cásta
Tónto
Asneiráő

O the fine snout!
What an ape's face!
A chicaner
A cheat, an impostor
A tale-bearer, a tell-tale
O the dull thing
A knave
A rogue, a rascal
Cursed race
Giddy-brains, blunderbuss
A great beast, a thick-skull

#### To admire.

O' Déos!

Hé possível!

Quem tería imaginádo,
crído, díto

Que animál!

Que maravílha! or que milágre!

Naō me maravílho!

Cómo póde ser ísto! or
Cómo he possível!

Eis aquí cómo sáō as
côusas déste múndo!

O God!
Is it possible!
Who would have thought,
believed, said!
What a beast!
O strange!

I don't wonder How can that be!

So goes the world!

# To show Joy and Displeasure.

Que gósto!
Que glória!
Que alegría!
Que contentaménto he o
méu!
Que felicidáde!
Sínto isso
Sínto isso na álma
Sínto isso no coração
O' que desgráça he a mínha!

What pleasure!
What glory!
What joy!
How pleased I am!

What happiness!
I am sorry for it
That touches my very soul
It pierces me to the heart
O how unhappy am I!

Affrontár-me désta sórte!
Assím he que se tráta?
O'lha maróto!
Que bélla cortesía!
Naō devería tratár comígo désta sórte
Paréce-te bem?
Aprénde, pedáço d'ásno
O'lha cômo me tráta éste animál
Olhái que velháco he éste
Que diábo tem élle féito?
Pôis, aínda teimáis?

To affront me thus!
Do you deal thus?
You rogue!
O what fine manners!
You ought not to treat me thus
Do you think that well?
Learn, beast as thou art
See the brute, how he uses me
Do you behold that rascal
What the devil has he done?
What, are you obstinate

## To call.

still?

Ouve! Onde estás? Húma palávra Dúas palávra**s somé**nte Hark!
Where art thou?
A word
I'll speak but two words to
you

# To show Uneasiness, Trouble, and Sorrow.

Sínto or pésame
Déixame
Péço-te que me déixes
Naō me québres a cabéça
O'ra vámos, déixame
Déixame, vai com Déos
Váite daquí or váite embóra
Vái tratár da túa vída
Váite na má hóra, or váite
co' diábo

Naõmefaças a cabéça tônta Já me tens díto ísso hum cénto de vézes I am sorry
Let me be quiet
Prithee get thee gone
Do not break my head
Away, away
Go, go, God be with you
Get thee gone from hence
Go mind your own business
Go to the devil

Do not make me giddy You have told it me a hundred times already

## To ask.

Que nóvas há ? Que he ísto ? que há ?

What news?
What is this, what is the matter?

O'nde ídes?
Dónde víndes?
Que quer dizér?
De que sérve?
Que vos paréce?
Quem téve talatrevimento?
Que dizem? que se diz?
Cômo diz vm²?
Por que nao me responde?

Where are you going?
Whence come you?
What do you mean?
To what purpose?
What do you think?
Who has been so bold?
What do they say?
How do you say?
Why don't you answer?

## To forbid.

Deixái estár ísso Naō toquéis Naō digáis náda Guardáivos Let that alone
Do not touch
Say not a word
Have a care

# Of speaking, saying, doing, &c.

 $\emph{Fálle vm}^{ce}$  álto Fálle vứ" mânso Com quem fálla vmª? Fálle vmº comígo? Flpha lle-lheFálla vmª Portuguéz? Que diz  $vm^a$ ? Naõ dígo náda E'lla nao quer calár-se Ouvî dizêr que-Assím mo dissérao Assim dízem Assím dízem tôdos Quem lho dísse a vmª? Díssemo o Sr. A. Pôis élle he que lho disse? Pôis élla he que o dísse? Quándo o ouvío vm. dízêr? Disséraő mo hôje Naõ pósso crê-lo Que diz élle? Que vos disse elle? E'lle nao me disse náda Naö lho díga vm.E'u lho dirêi Naö díga náda Disse vm. aquillo?

Speak loud Speak low Who do you speak to? Do you speak to me? Speak to him, or to her Do you speak Portuguese? What do you say? I say nothing She will not hold her tongue I was told that— I was told so They say so Every one says so Who told it you? Mr. A. told it me Did he tell you so? Did she tell it? When did you hear it? I heard it to-day I can't believe it What does he say? What did he say to you? He said nothing to me Do not tell him that I'll tell him, or her of it Say not a word Did you say that?

Naō o disse
Naō disse vm. assim?
Que está vm. fazendo?
Que tem vm. feito?
Naō fáço náda
Naō ténho feito náda
Tem vm. acabádo?
Que está élle fazendo?
Que faz ella?
Que quer,or que ordéna vm?
Que lhe fálta?

I did not say it
Did you not say so?
What are you doing?
What have you done?
I do nothing
I have done nothing
Have you done?
What is he doing?
What does she do?
What is your pleasure?
What do you want?

# Of understanding or apprehending.

Enténde-o, or percébe-o vm. bem?
Percébe vm. o que élle disse?
Percébe vm. o que élle diz?
Enténdeme, or percébeme vm.?
Enténdo a vm. múito bem Naõ enténdo a vm.
Sabe vm. a língua Portuguéza?
Naõ a séi
Tem-me vm. percebído?
Agóra o percébo

Do you understand him well?

Did you understand what he said?

Do you understand what he says?

Do you understand me?

I understand you very well
I do not understand you
Do you understand Portuguese?
I do not understand it
Did you understand me?
Now I understand you
One cannot understand
what he utters
He speaks like a stammerer

Parêce gágo

# Of knowing, or having Knowledge of.

Sábe vm. ísso?
Naō o séi
Naō séi náda dísso
E'lla bem o sabía
Porventúra naō sabía élle
ísso?
Démos que éu o soubésse

Nao se percébe o que élle diz

Démos que éu o soubésse E'lle naö saberá náda dísso Elle núnca sóubenáda disto

E'u soube-o priméiro, or ántes q e vm. o soubésse

Do you know that? I do not know it I knew nothing of it She knew well of it Did he not know of it?

Suppose I knew it
He shall know nothing of it
He never knew any thing
about this
I know it before rea

I knew it before you

He ísto assim ou naõ? Naõ que éu saíba Is it so, or not?
Not that I know of

Of knowing or being acquainted with, forgetting, and remembering.

Conhêce-o vm.? Conhêce a vm.? Conhêce-os vm.? Conhêço-o muito bem Naõ os conhêço Nós nao nos conhecémos Conhéço-o de vista Conhêço-a de nôme Elle conhecéo-me múito bem Conhêce-me vm.? Tênho-me esquecido do sêu nômeTem-se vm. esquecído de mim?Conhéce-vos élla? Conhéce o Sr. a vm.?

Paréce que nas me conhéce

O Sr. bem me conhéce

E'lle ja me naō conhéce Ténho a honra de ser séu conhecído Lémbra-se vm. dísso? Naō me lémbro dísso Lémbro-me múito bem dísso Do you know him?
Do you know her?
Do you know them?
I know him very well
I do not know them
We do not know one another
I know him by sight
I have heard of her
He knew me very well
Do you know me?
I have forgot your name

Did you forget me?

Does she know you?
Does the gentleman know
you?
It appears he does not know

The gentleman knows me

He knows me no more
I have the honour to be known to him
Do you remember that?
I do not remember it
I do remember it very well

Of Age, Life, Death, &c.

Que idáde tem vm.? Que idáde tem séu irmaō? Ténho vínte e cínco ánnos Tem vínte e dôus ánnos Vm. tem máis ánnos do que éu

Que idáde terá vm.? He vm. casádo? Quántas vézes tem vm. sido casádo? How old are you? How old is your brother? I am five and twenty He is twenty-two years old You are older than I

How old may you be?
Are you married?
How often have you been married?

Quántas molhéres tem vm.
tído?
Tem vm. aínda páy, e
māy?
Méu páy morréo
Minha mãy morréo
Ha dôus ánnos que méu
páy morréo
Minha mãy casôu ôutra véz
Quántos filhos tem vm.?

Ténho quátro
Fílhos, ou filhas?
Ténho hum filho, e tres
fílhas?
Quántos irmaös tem vm.?

Naō ténho nenhúm vivo Tódos morréraō Tôdos havémos de morrér

How many wives have you Have you father and mother still alive? My father is dead My mother is dead My father has been dead these two years My mother is married again How many children have you? I have four Sons or daughters? I have one son and three daughters How many brothers have you? I have none alive They are all dead

Of the word hora, as a Noun as well as an Interjection.

Hóra

Eu estaréi lá, déntro de húma hóra Que hóras sáō? Saō séte hóras A que hóras estaréis vós

As hóras que fôr preciso

Hóras desoccupádas
A última hóra ou a hóra
da mórte
Cada hóra
De hóra, em hóra
Méya hóra
Hum quárto de hóra
Húma hóra e méya
Pérto das nóve hóras
Há huma hóra

Fóra de hóras

An hour, also a particular time

We must all die

I will be there within an hour What's o'clock?

It is seven o'clock

At what hour or time will
you be there?

In due or good time, at the time appointed
Leisure hours

The last hour, or the dying hour

Every hour
Hourly, every hour
Half an hour
A quarter of an hour
An hour and a half
About nine o'clock
An hour ago, or an hour

An hour ago, or an hour since

Beyond the hour, or very late

A hóras
Recolhér-se a boas hóras
Recolhér-se fóra de hóras
Hóras de jantár ou de ceár
Pérto das hóras de jantár
Aínda estáis na cáma a
éstas hóras?
O relógio dá hóras
Já déras ónze hóras
Relógio de hóra
Múito a bóas hóras

Na má hóra

A bôas hóras

Vái te na ma-hóra

Tôda a hóra que

A tôda a hóra que quizérdes
Hóra
Molhér que ânda para câda
hóra
Hóras de fazér oração
Hóras de hir á igréja
Hóras de hir para a câma
Hóras de comér
Já nao são hóras
Chegár á hóra
Estár esperândo pella súa
hóra
Nao vér a hóra

São hóras de, &c. Hóras canónicas

Hóras

In time To keep good hours To keep bad hours Dinner, or supper time About dinner-time Are you a-bed at this time of the day? The clock strikes It struck eleven o'clock Hour-glass Early, betimes Ir good time, in time, at the time appointed In an ill hour, unluckily, unfortunately Go to the devil, go and be hanged Whensoever, at what time soever At what time you will Time or hour of child-birth A woman near her time

Prayer-time
Church-time
Bed-time
Times of eating
The time is past, it is too late
Is for a person to die
To wait for God's time

To long, to desire earnestly, to wish with eagerness continued, with em, or de before the thing desired

It is time to, &c.

The set time for the clergy to say their office; also those parts of the office itself, called *Prime*, *Tierce*, *Sixth*, *None*, &c.

Any little prayer-book, but particularly that in which is the office of the Blessed Virgin

As quarênta hóras

So they call the space of three days, in which the consecrated Host is ex posed and laid to public view

Cônta das hóras

Horography, account of hours

A'rte de dividír o témpo em hóras

Horometry

# Hóra as an Adverb and Interjection.

Hóra deíxa-o-hír Hóra deíxate déstas parvoíces Hóra, deixémo-nos déstes

Hóra, deixémo-nos déstes compriméntos Hóra-vámos despárate

Hóra-vámos, despáxate Hóra vámos, naõ ha perígo

Hóra vámos, tíra daqui ísto

Hóra vámos, têm vergőnha Hóra, éu naő pósso sofrér aquillo

Hóra hum, hóra ôutro

E'lles hóra estáő sóbre hum pé, hóra sóbre óutro Hóra, que quer dizér ísso? Túdo o que he bóm, déve sér amádo; hóra, Déos he infinitamente bóm, lógo, &c.

Hóra, havía hum enfêrmo Por hóra Pray let him go Away with these fopperies

Away with these compliments
Come, come, make haste
Away, there is no danger

Away with this

Away for shame I cannot bear that

Sometimes one, sometimes another

They stand now on one foot, and then on another How now?

All that is good to be loved, now God is infinitely good, therefore, &c.

Now there was a sick man At present, for the present, now, at this time

#### A

# VOCABULARY

OP

# WORDS MOST USED IN DISCOURSE.

Do Céo e dos Elemêntos.

DÉOS Jesús Christo O Espírito Sánto A Trindáde A Virgem Os ánjos Os archánjos Os sántos Os bemaventurádos O céo O paraiso Inférno Purgatório Os diábos O fógo O ár A térra O már O sól. A lúa As estréllas

Os ráios

Of the Heavens and the
Elements
GOD
Lesus Christ

Jesus Christ The Holy Ghost The Trinity The Virgin The angels The arch-angels The saints The blessed Heaven Paradise Hell Purgatory The devils The fire The air The earth The sea The sun The moon The stars The rays

## PORTUGUESE

As núvens O vênto A chúva O trovaõ O relámpago Saráiva O ráyo A néve A geáda O caramélo O orválho Névoa Nevoéiro O terremóto O dilúvio O calôr O frío

250

The clouds The wind The rain Thunder The lightning Hail The thunderbolt The snow The frost The ice The dew A fog, or mist A thick fog The earthquake The deluge, or flood The heat

The cold

# Do Têmpo.

O día A nôite Mêyo día Méya nôite A manháa Despôis do mêyo día Húma hóra Hum quárto de hóra Mêya hora Tres quartos de hóra H $\hat{o}$ jeO'ntem  $Amanh\bar{a}a$ Antes d' ôntem Depôis de amanhãa Depôis de jantár Depôis de céa Húma semána Hum mês Hum anno Día sánto Día de trabálho O nascêr do sól O pôr do sól

# Of Time.

The day The night Noon Midnight The morning The afternoon An hour A quarter of an hour Half an hour Three-quarters of an hour To-day . Yesterday To-morrow The day before yesterday After to-morrow After dinner After supper A week A month A year A holy-day A working day The sun-rising The sun-set

## GRAMMAR.

Témpo de séga, or da acéifa Témpo de vindíma The harvest The vintage

Das Estaçõens do Têmpo.

Of the Seasons.

A primavéra O veráŏ O outóno O invérno The spring
The summer
Autumn
Winter

Os Días da Semâna.

The Days of the Week.

Domíngo Segúnda féira Térça féira Quárta féira Quínta féira Séxta féira Sábado Sunday Monday Tuesday Wednesday Thursday Friday Saturday

Dos Méses.

Of the Months.

Janéiro Feveréiro Márço Abríl Máyo Júnho Júlho Agôsto Setémbro Outúbro Novémbro Dezémbro January
February
March
April
May
June
July
August
September
October
November
December

Días Sântos.

Holy-Days of the Year.

Día de A'nno bom Día de Réys, a Epiphanía A Candelária New Year's Day Twelfth Day Candlemas Day Purificação
O Entrúdo
Quárta féira da Cinzas
A Quarésma
Annunciação
As Quátro Témporas
A Semána sánta
Domingo de Rámos
Quárta féirá de Trevas
Quínta féira de Endoênças

Sésta féira da Paixáõ Páscoa da Resurreyçáõ Assumpçáō de N. Sª. As Rogaçóens, or Ladaínhas Ascensão Pentecóste

Día do Côrpo de Déos Día de S. Joáo Día de S. Pédro Día de tódos os Sántos Día dos Finádos Día de S. Martínho Día de Natál Vigília, or véspera

Da Igréja e Dignidádes Ecclesiásticas.

A náve
Zimbório
Pináculo
Côro
Capélla
Estánte

Sacristía Campanário, or törre dos sínos Síno Badálo Pía Hysópe The Purification
The Carnival, or Shrovetide
Ash Wednesday
The Lent
Lady day in March
The Ember Weeks
The Holy Week
Palm Sunday
Wednesday before Easter
Maunday Thursday, the
last Thursday in Lent
Good Friday
Easter Day
Lady-Day in harvest
Rogation Week

The Ascension
The Pentecost, or Whitsuntide
Corpus Christi Day
Midsummer Day
Lammas Day
All Saints Day
All Souls
Martinmas
Christmas Day
The eve

Of the Church and Ecclesiastical Dignities.

The aisle of the church
The dome
Pinnacle
The choir
The chapel
A reading desk, or chorister's desk
The vestry
The belfry, or steeple

The bell
The clapper of the bell
The font
A sprinkler

Confessionário Tribúna Cemitério

Carneiro Altár Frontál Pállio

Toálha do altár

Missál Sotána Sobrepellíz Roquéte

O pápa
Hum cardeál
Hum patriárca
Hum arcebíspo
Hum bíspo
Hum legádo
Vice legádo
Hum núncio
Hum preládo
Hum commendador
Hum abbáde
Húma abbadéssa
Hum priór
Hum reitór
Beneficiádo

Fráde, or religióso
Coróa
Hum guardiáö
Hum definidór
Hum provinciál
Hum gerál
Hum vigário
Hum vigário gerál
Hum deáö
Hum arcediágo
Diácono
Subdiácono
Hum cónego
Arcipréste
Hum clérigo

A confession seat A tribune, or gallery

A church-yard, a buryingplace

A charnel An altar

An antipendium A canopy
The altar cloth

A missal, a mass-book

A cassock A surplice

A short surplice, a bishop's

surplice
The pope
A cardinal
A patriarch
An archbishop
A bishop
A legate
A vice-legate
A nuncio
A prelate
A commander
An abbot
An abbess
A prior

A rector
Beneficed clergyman, or incumbent

A friar

A vicar

A shaven crown A guardian A definitor A provincial A general

A vicar-general

A dean
Archdeacon
Deacon
A sub-deacon
A canon

Arch-priest A priest

Capelláő
Hum esmolér
Hum párroco
Beneficio simples
Fréira
Hum prégadór
Sacristáő, or sancristáő
Meníno do cáro

A chaplain
An almoner
A curate
Sinecure
A nun
A preacher, or lecturer
A sexton, a vestry-keeper
A singing boy

Nômes das côusas que geralmênte se comem.

Paō
A'goa
Vinho
Cárne
Péixe
Cárne cozida
Cárne açáda
Hum bocádo de páō
Hum pastél
Sópa
Cáldo
Saláda
Mölho

Frúta Queíjo Manteíga Names of things most usually eaten.

Bread
Water
Wine
Meat, or flesh
Fish

Boiled meat Roast meat

A mouthful of bread

A pye Soup Broth A sallad

Any kind of sauce to dip in, provoking appetite

Fruit Cheese Butter

Do Serviço de huma Mêsa.

A mésa
Húma cadéira
A toálha da mésa
Toálha de maős
Hum guardanápo
Húma fáca
Hum gárfo
Húma colhér
Hum práto
Hum saleíro
Galhéta do vinágre
Galhéta do azeíte

Of the Covering of the Table.

The table
A chair
The table-cloth
A towel
A napkin
A knife
A fork
A spoon
A plate
A saltseller
A vinegar-bottl

A vinegar-bottle, or cruet A cruet, or vial for oil

Talhér Assucaréiro

Bayxélla ou serviço de

práta

Húma cubérta

Práto, guardanápo, fáca, gárfo, colhér (túdo júnto)

Járro

Húma bacia Hum cópo

Húma garráfa Húma táça

Castiçál Véla

Tesouras de espevitar

Húma sálva Húma escudélla Césto pára pór o páð

Donzélla Faquéiro

Lóuça de Bárro Lóuça de estánho A cruet-stand Sugar-basin A set of silver plate

A cover

A course

The ewer A basin A glass A bottle A cup A candless

A candlestick
A candle
Snuffers
A salver
A porringer
A bread-basket

A dumb-waiter
A case for knives

Earthen ware

Pewter

## Do Comêr, e Bebêr.

Váca
Carnéiro
Vitélla
Cordéiro
Gallínha
Gállo
Perú
Almóndegas
O jantár
Almóço
Céa
Merénda
Consoáda

Banquête Fóme Séde Fastío Páŏ

# Of Eating and Drinking.

Beef
Mutton
Veal
Lamb
Hen, a fowl
Cock
A turkey
Force meat balls
The dinner
Breakfast
Supper
The afternoon's leafternoon's leaft

The afternoon's luncheon
A light supper, as upon a
fast-day

An entertainment, a banquet Hunger

Thirst
A loathing
Bread

Páō frêsco, or páō mólle.

Páő quênte

Páö de tôda farinha Páõ bránco, or páö alvo

Arrôz

Páō de rála Pá5 de ceváda Páő de centéo Páō de avéa Páö de mílho miúdo

Páő de mílho gránde, ou

de maíz Páo lévedo Páö ásmo Biscouto

Migálha de páõ Fatia de páō Côdea de páõ

Mássa Torta RôscaEstofádo  $Fi \hat{a} mbre$ 

Cárne assáda sóbre grélhas

Cárne frita

Picádo, or cárne picáda Javalí, or pôrco montêz

Presúnto  $P\delta rco$ Cabrito Toucínho Hum lômbo Maõs de carneíro Fressúra, or forcúra

Cachóla de porco Linguíça, or lingóica Chouriço de sángue de pôrco

Fricassé FigadoLéite Náta Sôro

Requeijáő Coalháda

New bread A hot loaf Common bread White bread

Rice

Brown bread Barley bread Rye bread Oaten bread Millet bread Indian corn bread

Leavened bread Unleavened bread

Biscuit

A crumb of bread A slice of bread A crust of bread

Dough A tart

Bread made like a roll

Stewed meat Cold meat Broiled meat Fried meat Sausage meat A wild boar

Ham, gammon of bacon

Pork Kid BaconA loin

Sheep's trotters A pluck A pig's head

 ${f A}$  sausage Black-pudding

A fricassee Liver Milk Cream Whey

A kind of new cheese

Curdled milk

6vo
Gémma do 6vo
Clára do 6vo
6vo frésco
6vo mólle
6vo dúro
6vo assádo
6vo galládo
6vos reáes

óvos escalfádos 6vos fritos 6vos mexidos, e fritos Bolinhólo 6vas de péixe Dóces Conféitos Marmeláda

## O que se A'ssa.

Hum capaö Húma fránga Hum frángo Pómbos Pómbo trocáz

Gallinhóla Húma espécie de gallinhóla pequena áqualos Castelhános chamaő gal-

lineta ciéga
Perdíz
Tórdo
Faisáō
Faisaōsínho
Hum leitáō
Veádo
Hum coélho
Láparo
Lébre

A'dem Gánso, or o mácho da ádem Páta Páto

An egg The volk of an egg The white of an egg A new-laid egg A soft egg A hard egg A roasted egg An egg with a chicken in it Sweet eggs spun out like hairs Poached eggs Fried eggs An amlet A fritter The roes of fish Sweetmeats Comfits Marmalade

# That which is roasted.

A capon
A pullet
A chicken
Pigeons
A wood culver, or woodpigeon
A woodcock
A snipe

A partridge
A thrush
A pheasant
A pheasant-powt
A roasting-pig
A stag
A rabbit
A young coney
A hare
A duck
A drake

Goose [goose Gander, the male of the

Calhándra Codorniz

A sky-lark A quail

#### De ôutros Pássaros.

Of other Birds.

A'guia A'guia nóva Abútre Abestrús Esmerilhaõ Gaviáo Môcho Falcáã Falcáő que ainda na vôa Gerifalte Sácre

GarcaMelhar'ucoGarcota

Milhano, or milhafre

Côrvo Grálha Grálho

Alvéloa or rabéta

Canário Pintacilgo Mérlo Tentilhá5 Rouxinól Verdelháő Papagáyo Péga

Estornínho, or zorzál

Francélho Môcho Corúja Morcego

A've noctúrna, cómo mélro, que máma as cábras

O francolim Búfo Cerceta

Côrvo morinho

An eagle An eaglet A vulture An ostrich A merlin

A sparrow-hawk The horned owl A falcon A jass-hawk A ger-falcon

A saker, a saker-hawk

A heron Tomtit. A little heron A kite

A crow, or raven

A rook A jack-daw A wag-tail A canary-bird A gold-finch A black-bird A chaffinch A nightingale A green-bird A parrot A magpie A starling

A hobby, a musket

A screech owl

A bat

A goat milker

A godwit, a moor-cock A night crow, or raven A teal

A cormorant

Gaivóta Gaiváõ

Andorínha Mergulhaõ Marréca Picánco Taralháő Paváõ Pavôa Arára Pardál Rôla Alcyôn Cegônha

Tarambóla Pisco

Cúco

Císne

Pintarrôxo $Gr \delta u$ 

Pavoncíno

Pelicana

A moor-hen, or gull A martlet, or martin, a kind of swallow

A swallow

A dive, or didapper

A wild-duck

A wren, a little bird A kind of ortolan

A peacock A pea-hen A macaw A sparrow A turtle-dove A king's fisher A stork A cuckow A swan A red robin

A crane A lapwing A pelican A plover

A bull-finch, or red-tail

Para os Días de Péixe, ou de Jejúm.

Sópa de érvas, &c.

Péixe

Péixe do már

Péixe do río, ou da ágoa

dôce Sável Anchôva

Anguía, or Enguía

Blpha rboLúcio Cárpe Síba L'ula

Cábra

Gor azCóngro

Douráda

For Fish Days, or Fast Days.

Soup meagre, pottage

Fish Sea-fish

Fresh-water fish

A shad An anchovy An eel A barbel A pike, or jack

A carp A cuttle

A calamarv The miller's thumb A rochet, or roach

A conger | The gilt head Dorado, St. Peter's fish, or Linguádo Lagôsta Bordálo

Múgem Rodoválho Sárda Caválla Sardínha Bacalháö Arrénque Voadőr

Arrênque de fúmo Arrênque com 6vas

Pescáda Cadóz Ostra Lamprêa

Lamprêa pequêna Pôrco marínho

Pólvo Pérca Tínca Trúta Atúm Salmaõ Carmaraô

Carmaraõ Caranguéjo Améijoa

Ervílhas Fávas Espináfres

Alcachófras Espárgo

Côuve Repôlho Nábos

Grélos de côuve Côuve créspa Couve Flór Beldroégas Cenóuras

Célgas, or acélgas

Tomátes

A sole A lobster

A sturgeon; some call it

shad-fish A mullet

A byrt or turbot

A sort of little mackarel

A mackarel
A pilchard
Dry cod
A herring
A flying-fish
A red herring

A hard-rowed herring

A kind of cod fish

A gudgeon An oyster A lamprey A lampern A porpoise

Pourcontrell or many-feet

Perch A tench A trout A tunny-fish A salmon

A shrimp, or pawn

A crab A cockle Pease Beans Spinage Artichokes Asparagus

Cabbage, colewort Summer cabbage

Turnips Sprouts

Curled colewort
Cauliflower
Purslane
Carrots
Beets

Love-apples

## Para temparár o Comêr.

Sál Pimênta Pimentáã Azéite Vinágre Mostárda Crávo da India Canéla Lour'eiroAlcapárras Cogumélos Túbara da térra Cebólas Ourégaő Fúncho: Cebolinhas A'lho Laránjas Limbens Pinhôens Perreil Sálsa Orteláä Aipo A'lho pôrro Coêntro

## To season Meat with.

Salt Pepper Cayan pepper Vinegar Mustard Cloves Cinnamon Laurel Capers Mushrooms Truffles Onions Organy Fennel Young onions Garlick **Oranges** Lemons The kernels of a pine-apple Wild parsley Garden parsley Mint Cellery Leek Coriander Saffron Cummins

# Para Saláda.

Açafrám

Cominhos

Almeirao
Almeirao horténse, or en
dívia
Alfáce
Chicória
Agrióens
Mastrúços or mastúrços
Cerefólio
Rábao

# For a Salad.

Wild succory Endive

Succory
Water cresses
Cresses
Chervil
Raddish root

Pâra Sombremêsa.

Macaās Péras Péra bergamóta Pécegos Camoêza Albricoque Ceréjas Ceréjas de sáco Ginjas Gínja garrafál

Laránja da Chína T'vas Pássas de úva U'va espím Figos Fígos lámpos

Améixas Pássas de améixas Ambras de çarça, or de sulva Amóras que nácem de húma sorte de sylva tênra Amóras que nácem da amoréira Marmélos Româās Líma Azeitônas *Amêndoas* Nésperas Melāõ Melancia, or balancia Castánhas Nózes Avelans Morangos

Tâmara

Medrônho

For the Dessert.

Apples Pears A bergamot pear Peaches A pippin Apricot Cherries Hard cherries Sour cherries A very large sort of cherry,

the fruit of the dwarf cherry-tree China-orange Grapes Raisins

Figs The first figs that come in May Plums Prunes

Blackberries

Gooseberries

Raspberries Mulberries

Quinces Pomegranates A lime Olives Almonds Medlars A melon Water-melon Chesnuts Walnuts Hazel nuts Strawberries 5 1

A sort of fruit they have in Portugal like a strawberry, said to intoxicate

A date

## GRAMMAR.

Fístico
Alfarróba
Bolóta
Sôrva
Açofeifa, or maçá**ā** de náfega
Dőces

A pistache-nut A carob A sweet acorn Service A jubub

Sweet-meats

## Das A'rvores e Arbústos.

Damasquéiro  $\pmb{Amendo\'eira}$ Cerejêira Castanhéiro Cidréira Sorvéira Palméira Figuéira Marmelêiro Macéira Macéira da náfega Roméira Limoéiro Amorêira Oliveira Nesperéira Laranjeira Múrta Noguéira Zambujéira E'raPeceguéiro Rosêira Ameixiêira Perêira Rosmaninho Pinhêiro Giésta

# Of Trees and Shrubs.

An apricot-tree An almond-tree A cherry-tree A chesnut-tree A citron-tree A service-tree A palm-tree A fig-tree A quince-tree An apple-tree A jubub-tree A pomegranate-tree A lemon-tree A mulberry-tree An olive-tree A medlar-tree An orange-tree Myrtle A walnut-tree A wild olive-tree Ivy A peach-tree A rose-bush A plum-tree A pear-tree Rosemary A pine-tree Broom

Dos Reptís, e Animáes amphíbios.

Minhóca Serpénte Of Reptiles and Amphibious Creatures.

An earth-worm
A serpent

Serpénte com ázas

A'spide Cóbra

Cóbra de cascavél

Vibora Lagárto O'sga Alacráo Crocodilo

crocodilo da Jacaré, or

AmericaCastôr. Cágado Lôntra

A flying serpent

An asp A snake A rattle-snake

A viper

A lizard

An evet, eft, or newt

A scorpion A crocodile An alligator

A beaver A land tortoise An otter

#### Dos Inséctos.

Arânha Formíga Caracól  $R\dot{a}\bar{a}$ Sápo Ouçáõ Escaravélho Carúncho

Piôlho, or lagarta da hor-

talíça Cigárra Borbol'etaGríllo Piólho Piôlho ládro Léndea Púlga MôscaPersovéjo Carrapáto Gafanhóto Polílha, or tráça Véspa, or abespora

Grasshopper

AbelhaZángo, or Zangáő

 $Tava ilde{o}$ Bôy de Déos. Mosquito

Of Insects.

A spider A pismire or ant A snail A frog A toad Hand-worm A beetle Wood-worm Caterpillar

A butterfly A cricket A louse Crab-louse A nit A flea A fly A bug A tick A locust Moth A wasp A bee A drone An ox fly A lady-bird A gnat

#### Gráos de Parentêsco.

# Degrees of Kindred.

Páy Māy Avô Avô Bisavô Bisavô Filho Filha Irmáõ Irmáā

Primogénito O fílho maís môço

Tío Tía Sobrínho Sobrínha Prímo Príma

Prímo com irmáõ Príma com irmáā

Cunhádo
Cunháda
Méyo irmáõ
Sógra
Padrásto
Madrásta
Enteádo
Enteáda
Génro
Nóra
Néta

Bisnéta Consórte, masc. and fem.

Marído Molhér Irmáõ gémeo

Néto

Bisnéto

Coláço, or irmáo de léite

Bastárdo Compádre Father Mother Grandfather Grandmother Great grandfather Great grandmother

Son Daughter Brother Sister

The eldest son The youngest son

Uncle Aunt Nephew Niece Cousin

A female cousin The male first cousin The female first cousin

Brother-in-law
Sister-in-law
Half-brother
Father-in-law
Mother-in-law
A step-father
A step-mother
A step-son
A step-daughter
A son-in-law
A daughter-in-law
A grand-daughter

A great grand-son
A great grand-daughter

A consort Husband Wife

A twin-brother A foster-brother A bastard

A male-gossip

## PORTUGUESE

Comádre Afilhádo Afilháda Padrínho Madrínha O parénte A parénte

266

Parênte por affinidade, or consanguinidade

A female gossip A god-son A god-daughter A god-father A god-mother A male relation A female relation

A kin, a relation either of affinity or consanguinity

Dos differêntes Géneros de Estádo de hum Hómem, ou de húma Molhér, e das súas Qualidades, Of the Conditions of Man and Woman, as well as of their Qualities.

Hum hómem Húma molhér Hum hómem de idáde Húma molhér de idáde Hum vélho Húma vélha Hum môço, ou mancébo Húma rapariga Hum amánte Húma amíga Húma criánça, ou meníno Hum rapáz Hum rapazinho Húma menina Húma donzélla Húma vírgem A'mo Criádo Criáda Cidadáõ R'usticoHum estrangêiro Hum viúvo Ηύπα νίψνα Hum herdéiro Húma herdéira Soltéiro Estádo de soltéiro

A man A woman An aged man An aged woman An old man An old woman A young man A girl A lover A mistress A child, a little child A boy A little boy A little girl A maiden A virgin A master A mistress A male-servant A female-servant A citizen A countryman A stranger, or foreigner A widower A widow An heir An heiress A bachelor

Bachelorship

Hómem casádo Molhér casáda

Molhér que está de párto

Déstro Agúdo Recatádo

Astúto, or velháco Espérto, or vívo

Esperto, of Dôudo Malicióso Tímido Valerôso

Tônto Embustéiro Grosséiro

Bem criádo Cortéz Jústo

Desavergonhádo Impertinente Importúno Descuidádo Temerário Constánte Devóto

Diligênte [sivo Misericordióso, or compas-

Paciénte Ambicióso Cobiçóso Sobérbo Cobárde Lisonjéiro Golóso

Desleál Desagradecido Inhumáno

Insolênte Luxuriôso Teimôso

Preguiçôso Pródigo Molherêngo

Atrevido Alégre A married man A married woman A lying-in woman

Dexterous Sharp Cautious

Cunning, sly, crafty

Sprightly Mad
Malicious
Fearful
Brave
Stupid
Deceitful
Clownish
Well-bred

Well-bred Courteous Just

Impudent
Impertinent
Troublesome
Careless
Rash
Constant

Devout
Diligent
Merciful
Patient
Ambitious
Covetous
Proud
Coward
A flatterer
Glutton
Treacherous

Treacherous
Ungrateful
Inhumane
Insolent
Lewd

Positive, stubborn

Slothful Prodigal

Given to women

Bold Merry

Que tem ciúmes Adúltero  $Saltead \^or$ Matadór Murmurador Calumniador Feiticéiro Traidôr Malvádo Rebélde Pérfido Rôbo Mentirôso Altívo  $C\delta xo$ Estropeádo das maõs Cégo

Môuco or súrdo

Múdo

Canhôto, or esquérdo

Jealous Adulterer A highwayman A murderer A censurer A calumniator A sorcerer A traitor Wicked A rebel Perfidious A buffoon A liar Haughty Lame of the legs Lame of the hands Blind Deaf Left-handed

Dos Moradòres de húma Cidáde.

Fidálgo
Nóbre
Mecánico
Tendéiro
Mercadór, or hómem de negócio
O vúlgo, or a plébe
Canálha, or a máis vil
génte da plébe
Officiál

Jornaléiro
Ouríves
Ouríves do buro
Livréiro
Impressor
Barbéiro
Mercador de séda
Mercador de pánno

Of the Inhabitants of a City.

A nobleman
A gentleman
A mechanic
A shop-keeper
Merchant, or tradesman

The mob The rabble

Dumb

A workman, a man that labours with his hands A journeyman

A silver-smith
A gold-smith
A book-seller
A printer
A barber
A mercer

A woollen-draper

## GRAMMAR.

Mercador de panno, de linho, e roupas da India, or

fanqueiro Alfayáte

Alfayáte remendáö

Costureíra,

Chapeleiro, or Sombreireiro

Sapatéiro

Remendáő (sapatéiro)

Ferréiro Alveitár Cerralheíro Parteíra Médico

Charlatáő Cirurgiám, or surgiáő

Tira dentes Selleiro

Carpenteiro Pioneiro, or gastadôr (in

an army)
Padéiro
Carniceíro
Fruteíro

Molher que vénde verdúras

ou ortaliças Pasteleiro

Taverneíro, or vendeíro Cervejeíro, or o que faz cer-

véja Estalajadeíro Bofarinhéiro Relojoeíro Pregoeíro

Joyeíro, or joyalheíro

Boticário
Vidraceíro
Carvoeíro
Jardineíro
Letrádo
Procuradôr
Advogádo
Juíz

Carcereiro Carrásco A linen-draper

A tailor
Botcher
A sempstress
A hatter
Shoemaker
A cobler
A blacksmith
Farrier
A locksmith
A midwife
A physician
A quack

A surgeon A tooth-drawer

A sadler
A carpenter
A pioneer

A baker A butcher A fruiterer A herb woman

A pastry-cook
A vintner
A brewer

An inn-keeper
A pedlar
A watch-maker
A crier
A jeweller
An apothecary
A glazier
A coal-man
A gardener

A gardener A lawyer A solicitor

An advocate, or a pleader

A judge A gaoler A hangman

A porter

#### Os cínco Sentídos.

A vísta O ouvído O olfácto O gôsto O tácto

## The five Senses.

The sight
The hearing
The smell
The taste
The feeling

#### As Pártes do Côrpo Humâno.

Cabéca Miólos, or cérebro TouticoTésta Molleíra **F**ôntes **O**rélha Cartilágem TimpanoSobrancélha Pálpebras, or Capéllas dos 6lhos Pestânas Lagrimál A'lvo do ôlho Menínas dos ólhos Naríz Maçáā do rôsto. Sépto, or diaphrágmo do narizA pônta do naríz A bôca Os dêntes A gengiva A língoa Padár, paladár, or céo da bôca Queixáda A bárba

# The Parts of the Human Body.

The head
The brains
The hinder part of the head
The forehead
The mould of the head
The temples
The ear
The gristle, or cartilage
The drum of the ear
Eye-brow
The eye-lid

The eye-lashes
The corner of the eye
The white of the eye
The eye-balls
The nose
The ball of the cheeks
The nostrils
The gristle of the nose

The tip of the nose
The mouth
The teeth
The gum
Tongue
The roof, or palate of the
mouth
The jaw

The chin

As barbas Big 'o desO pescôço A núca A garganta Séyo  $T\hat{e}ta$ Péito Bíco de péito Estômago Cost'elasEmbigo Barriga Verílha O bráço O cotovélo Sobáco, or sováco A maõ Púlso A pálma da maõ Os dédos O dédo polegár O dédo mostrador Dêdo do mêyo Dédo annulár Dédo menínho, or mínimo Pôntas dos dédos

Júntas, e nós dos dedos

Dédo do pé
A únha
As cóstas
Os ómbros
Ilhárgas
As nádegas
Cóxa
Joélho
Barríga da pérna
Espinháço
Tornozélo
O pé
Sóla do pé
O coração
Os bófes

The heard Whiskers The neck The nape of the head The throat The bosom The pap The breast The nipple The stomach The ribs The navel The belly The groin The arm The elbow The arm-pit The hand The wrist The palm of the hand The fingers The thumb The fore-finger The middle-finger The ring-finger The little-finger The tips, or tops of the fin-The joints, and knuckles of the fingers

A toe
The nail
The back
The shoulders
The sides
The buttocks
The thigh
The knee
The calf of the leg
The ridge-bone of the back
The sole of the foot
The sole of the foot
The heart
The lungs

## PORTUGUESE

O fígado O báço Os rins A bôca do estômago As tripas O fél A mádre Bexiga Sångue Cúspo Ourina Excremênto

Mônco or ránho

Carépa, or cáspa

272

Suór

Lágrima

The liver The spleen The kidnevs The pit of the stomach The guts The gall The womb The bladder The blood Spittle Urine Dung Sweat or perspiration Mucus Tear Scurf

#### Dos Vestidos.

Hum vestído Cabelleira Craváta Chapéo A'bas do chapéo [chapéo Cordao, ou fita, para o *Barrête* Capóte Gibáõ Véstia, or coléte Camisa Casáca Casacáõ Calçõens Cerbulas Méas, or méyas Mêas de cabrestilho Lígas Sapátos Chinélas Bótas Fivelas Esporas Púnhos

Tálím, or taly

# Of Cloaths.

A suit of cloaths A wig A cravat or neckcloth A hat The brims A hatband A cap A cloak A doublet A waistcoat A shirt A coat A great coat Breeches Drawers Stockings Stirrup stockings Garters Shoes Slippers Boots Buckles Spurs Ruffles A shoulder-belt

Boldrié
Expáda
Lúvas
Cínta
Lénço
Lénço para o pescôço
Samárra, or pellóte do
cámpo

A sword-belt
A sword
Gloves
A girdle
Handkerchief
A neck-handkerchief
A shepherd's jacket

Para Molhéres.

Camísa de molhéres Toucádo Sáya Mantilha

Manto

Fúso

Avental Bracelétes Anél Bríncos Léque  $Pentead \delta r$ Toucadôr Sináes Esp'elhoRegáloEspartílho Pente Alfinêtes Tesoura Dedál AgúlhaFío Fío de pérolas Polvilhos**J**óyas  $C \delta r$ Palíto Róca

Almofadînha para alfinêtes

#### For Women.

A shift, or smock A head-dress A petticoat

A little cloak women wear on their heads

A mantle, a kind of cloak women wear in Portugal, covering their head and the upper part of their body

An apron
Bracelets
Ring
Ear-rings
A fan

A combing cloth
A toilet, a dressing table
Patches to wear on one's face

A looking-glass

A muff Stays A comb Pins

A pair of scissars

A thimble A needle Thread

A necklace of pearls

Powder
Jewels
Paint
A tooth-pick
A distaff
The spindle

Small pincushion

Agúlha de toucár
Fitas
Fichú (sórte de lénço para
o pescóço)
Tenazínhas
Pendéntes
Palatina
Guárda infánte, or Guard
infante
Véo
Rénda
Bílros

Bodkin Ribbons A necklace

Nippers Bob, or pendant Tippet Farthingale, or hoop

Veil
Lace
Bobbins
Bones
Hungary water
Scented water
Bodice

## Os dôze Signos Celêstes.

A'goa da rainha de Ungria

Bílros feítos de 6sso

A'goa de chéiro

Justilho

A'ries
Tôuro
Gémini or Géminis
Cáncer
Leaõ
Vírgem
Líbra
Escorpiáõ
Sagitário
Capricórnio
Aquário
Peíxes

# The twelve Celestial Signs.

Aries, or the ram
The bull
The twins
The crab
The lion
The virgin
The balance
The scorpion
The archer
The goat
The water-bearer
The fishes

# De húma Cása e do que lhe pertênce.

Cása
Alicérse
Paréde
Tabíque
Páteo, or Pátio
Andár, or sobrúdo
Facháda
Janélla

# Of a House, and all that belongs to it.

A house
Foundation
A wall
A light brick-wall
A court, or yard
A floor
The front
A window

Abóbada As escádas Degráos Telhádo Télhas

Ladrílhos, or tijólos Sála, or quarto Antecámara

Antecâmara Sála Técto Alcóva Balcáő Gabinéte Almário Guárda-róupa

Adéga
Cozínha
Despénsa
Cheminé
Cavallaríça
Gallinhéiro, or cása das

gallínhas Poléiro Jardím Necessária Cása de jantár Quárto de cáma Andár rénte da Rúa Pórta

Postígo Liminár, or lumiár Clara bóia

Algeróz Beíras, or ábas do telhádo A couceira da pórta

Fechadúra Cadeádo Ferrólho Trânca da pórta Cáno da cháve

Cháve méstra Guárdas da fechadúra

Palhetáő da cháve Vidráca

Escáda feita a carracól

A vault
The stairs
Steps
A tiled roof
Tiles
Bricks
A room
Antichamber
A hall

A roof
An alcove
A balcony
Closet
A cupboard
Wardrobe

Wardrobe
A cellar
A kitchen
A pantry
A chimney
The stable
A hen-house

A hen-roost
A garden
Water-closet
A dining-room
Bed-chamber
A parlour
The door
A wicket
The threshold
Sky-lights

The gutter tile
The eaves
The hinges
A lock
A padlock

A padlock
The bolt
The bar of a door

The pipe of a key
A master-key
The wards of a lock

Key bit

The glass of a window A winding stair-case

Escáda secréta

Viga

Parêde méstra Parédes méyas

A'rcaCáma

Sobrecéo da câma Cortinas da câma

Lencóes

Cabecéira da câma

Péz da câma Côlcha Colcháő

Cobertôr Cobertôr de felpa Cama de Armação

TravesseiroTapéte Tapeçaría Pedern'eira

I'scaMécha $Enxerga ilde{v}$ Estêira

Cáens da cheminé

Folles Tenázes Férra

Abáno, or abanadór

Panélla Tésto

A'za da panélla

Férro para atiçár o lúme

Escumadéira Colhér grande Caldeira

Sertáã, or frigidéira

 $Coad\delta r$ Grélhas RáloEspêto Almofariz

Mao do almofariz

Back-stairs, a private stair-

 $\mathbf A$  beam

The main wall The party walls

Chest Bed

The bed's tester Bed curtains

Sheets

The bed's head Bed's feet

Counterpane, a quilt

A matrass A blanket A rug Bedstead A pillow A carpet Tapestry A flint Tinder Match

A straw-bed

A mat Hand-irons Bellows Tongs  ${f A}$  shovel Fire-pan A pipkin The pot-lid

The ear of a pot, or pipkin

A poker A skimmer A ladle A kettle A frying pan

A cullender, or strainer

Gridiron A grater A spit

A mortar wherein things

are pounded

A pestle

Redôma Bálde Sabaő -Rodílha Esfregáő Fórno Pá do fórno

Vascúlho para alimpár o

Vasculho para fórno Furínha Trinchánte Mordómo Escudeiro Camareíro mór Escóva

Escôva Vassôura Despenseiro Págem Lacáyo Cocheiro Cocheira

Móço dos cavállos, ou da estrebaría

Copeíro

Escudeiro de húma fidálga A'mo, ou senhôr da cása A'ma, ou senhôra da cása Grímpa A vial

A bucket, or pail

Soap

A kitchen towel A dish-clout

Oven

The peel of the oven

A maukin, a coal-rake to make clean an oven

Meal-flour
A carver
A steward

A valet-de-chambre A chamberlain

A brush
A broom
A steward
A page
A footman
A coachman
A coach-house

A groom A butler

A lady's gentleman usher The master of the house The mistress of the house Weather-cock

Côres.

Colours.

Bránco
Azúl
Azúl celéste
Azúl ferréte
Azúl ferréte
Azúl cláro
Cör de camúrça
Amarélo
Cör de rósa
Cör de pálha
Vèrde
Cör de vérde mar, ou vérde

White
Blue
Sky-colour
Dark blue
Light blue
Light yellow
Yellow
Rosy colour
Straw colour
Green
Sea-green

Côr vermélha, or Incarnada Côr vermélha muito viva,

or carmin Côr de cárne Côr carmesin

Côr nêgra, or prêta

Cór de mél Fúrta córes Cór víva Cór tríste Cór escúra Cór carregáda Cór de fógo

Cor de fogo
Párdo
Cór de cinza
Escarláta
Leonádo
Cór de laránja
Cór de azeitóna

 $R \delta x o$ 

Rôxo, or côr de aurora

Red colour

Carmine, a bright red colour

Flesh colour Crimson red Black colour A dark yellow

A deep changeable colour A lively and gay colour

A dull colour
A dark colour
A deep colour
Fire colour
Grey

Ash colour Scarlet Tawney Orange colour

Olive colour Purple, violet Aurora colour

Róxo sometimes signifies red or rosy colour; particularly in poetry, as in Camóens, Canto I. Stanza 82.

Para que ao Portuguêz se lhe iornásse, Em rôxo sángue a ágoa, que bebésse.

### Animáes.

Beasts.

Bésta doméstica
Bésta bráva
Bésta de cárga
Bésta de sélla
Gádo
Gádo grósso
Gádo miúdo
Rebánho
Manáda de gádo grósso
Tóuro
Bezérra
Bezérro

Tame beast
A wild beast
A beast of burthen
A beast for the saddle
Cattle
Great cattle
Small cattle
A flock
A herd of big cattle
Heifer

Heifer A calf, a steer, a young bullock

An ox

Boy

Búrro
Búrra
Pórco
Pórca
Fáca
E'goa
Cría
Pótra
Cavállo
Cavállo anaõ
Cavállo de pósta
Garranháã or cavá

Garranhão, or cavállo de lançamento
Cavállo de aluguel
Cavállo de côche
Cavállo que ánda de chôuto
Cavállo pequeno que serve para senhôras
Cavállo que tóma o freio

éntre déntes Cavállo ríjo da bóca Cavállo dóce de freío

Cavállo que tem bôa bôca

Cavállo que tropéssa Cavállo espantadiço Cavállo ardénte, or fogôzo Cavállo que mórde e dá côuces

Cavállo rebelláő Cavállo que naősóffre áncas

Cavállo mal mandádo
Cavállo de albárda
Cavállo de cárro
Cavállo de sélla
Cavállo de corrér
Cavállo de guérra
Cavállo de guerra
Cavállo de Barbaría
Cavállo capádo
Cavállo sem ser capádo
Cavállo que dá aos fólles

An ass A she-ass A hog, or pig A sow

A young mare, also a nag A mare

A foal, a filly A colt, or young horse

A horse
A nag
A post-horse
A stallion

A hackney-horse A coach-horse A jolting-horse A palfrey

A horse that champs the bit

A hard-mouthed horse
A tender-mouthed horse,
one that easily submits to
the curb

A horse that will eat any thing

A stumbling-horse A startling-horse A fiery horse

A biting and kicking horse

An untamed horse

A horse that will not carry double

A restive horse A pack-horse A cart-horse A saddle-horse A race-horse

A war-horse

A horse with all his furniture A Moorish horse, a barb

A gelding

A stone-horse

A broken-winded horse

Cavállo quatrálvo

Cavállo alazáő Cavállo báio

Cavállo castánho

Cavállo báio e castánho

Cavállo rocím

Cavállo remendádo

Cavállo ruáo or rússo porcelláno

Cavállo que sóffre ancas

Cavállo trotaõ

Cavállo que sérve para andár a cáça

Cavállo que anda de furta

passo Cáõ

Cáõ de quínta Cáõ de cáça Cáõ de ágoa Cáõ de gádo

Cáo de mostra, podengo, or

perdigueíro Cáõ de fíla Cáõ sacadôr Cáõ de búsca

Aláő Gálgo

Cáỗ para caçár rapôzas e

lôntras Cachorrínho

Cachorrínho de frálda

Cachôrro Mácho, or múlo

Múla Côrça

Côrça de tres ánnos Côrça de dôus ánnos

Côrça

Córça ou córa de hum anno

Gámo Veádo

Cábra montêz [nos Veádo gránde de cínco án-

Donínha

A horse that has four white feet

A sorrel horse A bay horse

A chesnut-coloured horse

A chesnut bay

A worthless nag, a poor jade

A dapple horse A dapple-grey horse

A double horse A trotting-horse

A hunter

A pad, an easy-paced horse

A dog

A house-dog A hound

A water spaniel A shepherd's dog A setting dog

A great cur, a mastiff dog

A dog tumbler A finder

A bull-dog A greyhound A terrier

A little puppy, a whelp

A lap-dog
A little dog
A he-mule
A she-mule
A she-deer, a do

A she-deer, a doe A spade

A pricket
A wild buck
A fawn
A fallow deer
A stag

A wild she-goat

A hart A weasel Teixúgo, or texúgo Gáto de agália

Donínha de rábo múi felpúdo a módo de rapôsa

Elephánte Foinha, fuinha Arminho

Ouríço cacheíro Arganáz Ráto Rapôsa

Lóbo Ráta da I'ndia

Foraõ Toupeira Leaõ Le6a Zibelina Leopárdo U'rso U'rsa U'rso pequéno

Tigre
Porco montêz

A badger A civet cat A squirrel

An elephant

A marten, or martern

An ermin
An hedge-hog
A dormouse

A rat A fox A wolf

A rat of India, of the big-

ness of a cat

A ferret
A mole
A lion
A lioness
A musk cat
A leopard
A he-bear
A she-bear
A bear's cub

A tiger

A wild bear

# Das Côusas do Câmpo.

Cása do cámpo, or quínta Cása de lavradór Quinteíro Boyeíro

Vaqueíro Porqueíro Pastôr Surráõ Cajádo Pastôra Herdáde

Hortoláő Hortaliça Cavadór

## Of Country Affairs.

A country house A farm-house

A husbandman, a farmer

A herdsman, he that ploughs with oxen, or tends them

A cow-keeper A swine-herd A shepherd

A scrip, or small bag A shepherd's hook

A shepherdess

A great or large field, a wide arable ground

A gardener

All sorts of herbage

A ploughman

#### 282

## PORTUGUESE

Vinhateiro Lavradôr

Pástos

Arádo

Férro do arádo Rábo do arádo

Abegaõ, or official que faz arados

Aguilháda Ensínho Gráde Semeadór Roçadór

Fouce roçadoura

Főuce Podáő Segadőr

Mangoál Forcádo

Caçadôr Pescadôr Rêgo

Térra que fica levantáda éntre dous régos

Outeíro

Mônte, or montánha

Válle Lagôa

 $Lcute{a}go$ 

Ribeiro

Ribeirínho Pláno, or planície Pénha, or rócha Penhásco Desérto A vine-dresser

A farmer, one who cultivates ground, whether his own or another's

Feeding ground, pasture, sheep-walk

A plough

The plough-share The plough-handle A plough-wright

A goad A rake A harrow A sower

A weeder
A weeding-hook
A scythe or sickle

A pruning-knife

man A flail

A prong to cast up sheaves of corn with

A reaper, or mower, harvest

A huntsman A fisherman A furrow

A balk, or ridge of land between two furrows

A hill

A mountain A valley

A moor, fen, or marsh, a standing water, but sometimes dry

 $\Lambda$  lake or standing pool, but always full of water

A brook, a stream of water, with a gentle or natural current

A rivulet, a streamlet

A plain A rock A great rock

A desert or wilderness

Despenhadeiro
Bósque
Bósque pequéno
Pedáço de chaō sem árvores,
déntro de hum bósque
Pomár, or vergél
Prádo,
Ramáda
Fónte
Trigo
Trigo candiál
Trigo bretánha
Centéo
Feráã

Tremêz

Espélta Espiga Cabeça da espíga

Baínha, dônde sáhe a espíga depóis de formáda
Legúmes
Gráõs de bico
Lentílha
Tramóço, or tremóço
Feijőens
Feijáő sapáta, or bájes
Feijáő fradínho

Chícharo
Carréta
Cárro
Róda
Caímbas
E'ixo
Ráyo da róda
Currál de bóys
Currál de ovélhas
Currál de cábras
Chiqueíro de pórcos
E'rva
Trígo em érva
Seára

A precipice
A wood
A grove, or thicket
A glade in a wood

An orchard
A meadow
A bower
A fountain
Wheat
The best wheat
Red wheat
Rye
Meslin, mixed corn, as
wheat and rye, &c.
The corn of three months

wheat and rye, &c.
The corn of three months
growth
Spelt
Ear of corn
The grain at the top of the
ear of corn

The husk in which the ear
of corn is lodged
Pulse
Spanish pease
A lentil
A lupine
French-beans

Kidney-beans
A sort of small French beans
with a black spot
Chicklings, a sort of peas

A waggon A cart A wheel The felloe

The felloes of the wheel
The axle-tree of a wheel
The spoke of a wheel
An ox-stall

An ox-stall
A sheep-fold
A house for goats
A hog's-sty
Grass
Green corn

Standing corn

### PORTUGUESE

284

Tárro Cíncho

Enxáda Enxadaő, or alviaő Cánga Congálhos

Sébe O que faz sébes Fóuce roçadóura de que

úzaő para fazér sébes Témpo de tosquía e a fésta que nélle fázem os rústicos Cantíga dos segadóres despóis de acabádo o témpo

da séga

Sárça Máta Máto

Leíra, or taboleíro Chôrro de ágoa

Veréda Rásto Césta Cabáz Cabána,

Cabána, or choupána

Cabáço

A milk-pail

A cheese-vat, to make

cheese in

A mattock, a hoe

A mattock

A yoke for oxen
The arms of the yoke used

for oxen

A hedge or fence

Hedger

Hedging-bill.

The sheep-shearing, the time of shearing sheep Harvest home

A bramble .

A thicket, a forest

A heath

A bed in a garden

A water-spout

A path

A track

A basket

A frail, a pannier

A cottage, a hut

A dry hollow gourd used to keep seeds in

Côusas pertencêntes à Guérra.

Serviço or vida militár
Militár or servírna guérra
Artilharía, artelharía, or
artilhería [haría
Canháő, or péça de artilCanháő de férro
Canháő de brónze
A'lma do canháő
Fogáő do canháő
Culátra do canháő

Things relating to War.

Warfare
To serve in the army
Artillery

A cannon
Iron cannon
Brass cannon
The mouth of a cannon
The touch-hole of a cannon
The breech of a cannon

Botáő, or extremidáde da culátra

Bálas encadeádas Bála de canháõ

Carréta de canháõ Pólvora Méyo canháõ Canháõ dobrádo Canháõ pára batér húma nraca

Canháő de vínte e quátro Calíbre Carregár Escorvár Fazér pontaría

Petréchos, or muniçõens de

Encravár húma péça Descavalgár húma péça Desparár

Tíro de péça Trém de artilharía Colubrína

Colubrína Falconéte Petárdo Pedreíro

Bómba
Bombárda
Morteiro
Granáda
Espingárda
Pistóla
Carabína
Mosquéte
Machadínha
Lánça
Alabárda
Partasána
Píque

Calár os píques pára resistír á cavalaría

Alfánge Espáda The pummel

Chain-shots

A cannon-bullet, cannon-ball, or cannon-shot

The carriage of a cannon

Gun-powder
A demi-cannon
A double cannon
A battering cannon

A twenty-four pounder Caliber

To load
To prime
To level
Military sto

Military stores

To nail up a gun
To dismount a gun

To fire
A cannon shot
The train of artillery

A culverin A falconet A petard

A swivel gun, pederero, or paterero

A bomb

A great gun, a bombard

A mortar-piece
A granade
A firelock
A pistol
A carabine
A musket
A battle-ax
A lance

A lance An halbert A partizan A pike

To present the pikes against

the cavalry Scymeter A sword Disembainhár a espáda Púnho da espáda Maçāa da espáda Guarniçáõ da espáda Fólha da espáda Metér máõ á espáda

Matár Ferir Desbaratár Sagueár Punhál Bayonéta Calár a bayonéta Capacéte Morriáõ Visêira Gorjál, or góla Peíto de ármas Couráca EspaldárCossoléte Broqu'elEscúdoAdága Sáya de málha Réy de armas

Aráuto Generál Tenênte generál Sargênto mór de batálha Sargénto mór Sargênto Mariscál, or marichál Méstre de câmpo generál Coronél Méstre de cámpo Coronél de infantaria Officiál de guérra Brigade iroTenente coronel Ajudânte de sargênto mor Ajudânte de tenente de méstre de campo

To unsheath the sword The handle of a sword The pommel of a sword The hilt of a sword The blade of a sword To clap one's hand on one's sword To kill To wound To rout To sack A poniard A bayonet To fix the bayonets A helmet A morrion The vizor of an helmet The gorget A breast-plate A cuirass The back-plate A corslet A buckler A shield Dagger, a short sword A coat of mail The king at arms, or king of heralds A herald A general A lieutenant-general A major-general Major  ${f A}$  serieant Marshal Camp-master general Colonel Camp-master Colonel of foot An officer Brigadier Lieutenant-colonel Adjutant Aid de camp

Capitáõ

Pôsto de capitáő

Tenénte Cornéta Alféres Bandeiras Estandárte

Alféres de cavalaría que tráz o estandárte

Pagadôr

Provedór des mantiméntos de húma armáda

Commissário

Commissário gerál

Engenheiro Quartel mestre Cábo de esquádra Tambór, or caixa

Tambor or o que toca tam-

bór Baquétas

Cordéis de tambór Tóques do tambór Tocár o tambór

Alvoráda, or generál

Passar móstra Trombetéiro, or trombéta

Pífano Sóldo Soldádo

Soldádo que está de sentinélla

Fataán

Entrár de guárda

Sentinélla

Rendér a guarda, sentinéllas, &c.

neuas, &c.
Blocár, or bloqueár
Infánte, or soldádo de pé Granadeíro Bigódes Dragaõ

Soldádo de cavállo Montár a cavállo Captain

Captaincy or captainship

Lieutenant
Cornet
Ensign
Colours
Standard

Standard-bearer

Pay-master Purveyor

Commissary

Commissary-general

Engineer Quarter-master Corporal

Drum A drummer

Drum-sticks Drum-strings

The beats of a drum

To beat a drum

The general, one of the beats of the drum

To muster, to review forces
A trumpeter
A fifer or fife

Wages, or pay for soldiers

A soldier

Soldier on duty

To mount, or go upon the guard

Duty, centinel

To relieve the guard, &c.

To block up
A foot soldier
Grenadier
Whiskers
Dragoon

Trooper, or horse-soldier To get on horseback

Apear-se Guárda da pessoa real, or archeiro Couracéiro Mosquetéiro Fuziléiro Alabardeiro Genisero Soldádo armádo com lánça Soldádo que léva píque, or piquéiro Besteiro, or soldado que pelėja com bėsta Pion eiroMinéiro, or minadôr Bombardeiro O tiro da artilharía, or o espáço que a bála desparáda córre; Alcance Artilheíro

A árte da artilharía
Generál de artilharía
Voluntário
Recrútas
Exploradór, or corredór
de exército
Espía
O que leva víveres ao exército, or vivandeíro
Soldádo que faz correrías

Timbále or atabale Infantería Cavalaría ligéira Vanguárda Côrpo de batálha Retaguárda Côrpo de resérva Côrpo de guárda Piquéte

A'la Batalháõ To alight Life-guard-man

Cuirassier Musketeer Fusilier Halberdier Janissary A spearman A pikeman

Cross-bow-man

A pioneer
Miner
A bombardier
Gunshot, or the space to
which a shot can be
thrown
Matross, also a gunner, or
cannoneer
Gunnery
General of artillery
A volunteer
Recruits
Scout

Spy Sutler

A marauder, a soldier that goes a marauding
Kettle-drum
The infantry
Cavalry
Light-horse
The vanguard
The main body of an army
The rear
The corps de reserve
The corps de guard
The piquets of an army,
or piquet guard
The wing of an army
Battalion

Destacamento
Regimento
Companhía
Esquadráō
Mochila
Bagágem, or bagáge
Batedôres do cámpo
Almazém, or armazém

Murálhas Améa, ou améya Parapeíto

Castéllo Fórte Fortaléza Fortificação Tórre

Citadélla, or cidadélla

Baluárte Fileíra Cortína Méya lúa Troneíra Térra-pléno Robelóm or

Rebelím, or revelím Contrascárpa

Contrascarpa Barreíra Falsabrága Fôsso Guaríta

Casamáta Corredór, or estráda enco-

bérta Cestôens

Estacáda, or palissáda

Redúto Ataláya

Manta, or Manteléte

Faxína Mína Fazer voár a mína Trincheíra Abrír as trincheíras Cámpo Víveres

Detachment Regiment A company A squadron Knapsack Baggage Discoverers Magazines Walls A battlement The parapet A castle A fort A fortress Fortification A tower A citadel Bulwark A file A curtain

Half moon
A loop-hole
A platform of earth

A ravelin
Counterscarp
A barrier
A faussbraye
A ditch

A centry-box A casemate

The covered way

Gabions
A palisade
A redoubt
A watch tower

A mantelet, or cover for men from the shot

Fascines A mine

To spring a mine

A trench

To open the trenches

Camp Provisions

Bisonho Batálha Dár batálha  $Escaram \acute{u}ça$ Sítio, or cêrco Quartél Encamisáda Sortida Batér Brécha $oldsymbol{Pont}lpha ilde{o}$ Escaláda AssáltoDar assálto Tomár por assálto Chamáda Capitulár Capitulação Térgoas**Guarnição** PrebóstePrebóste-generál LévaLevantár soldádos, or fazér léva de gênte Levantár o sítio

Assentár o cámpo Cámpo volânte Campanha

Levantár o cámpo

Metér-se em campánha

Guerrelpha rPéça de campanha Forrágem Quarteís de invérno Dar quartél Aquartelár-se Marchár bandeiras Marchár com despregádas Tocár a recolhêr Entregár húma práça Fila da vanguárda Fila do cêntro

A new recruit A battle To give battle A skirmish A siege A quarter A camisado A sally To batter A breach A pontoon An escalade An assault To storm To take by storm The chamade To capitulate Capitulation Truce Garrison A provost A provost marshal

Levy To raise men, to levy, or raise soldiers

To raise the siege To decamp To pitch one's camp

A flying camp A campaign

To begin the campaign, to open the field To war, to fight A field-piece A forage Winter quarters To give quarter

To take quarter To march To march with flying colours

To beat tap-tow To surrender a place Front rank

Centre rank

### GRAMMAR.

Fila da Rectaguárda Diréita

Esquérda Témpos Exercício Féchos

O Cao or Perro da Arma

 $Cr \delta nha$ 

A bôca da Arma

O cáno
Varéta
Gatilho
Pellotáő
Batalháő
A'la
Devisáő
Linha ou Fileira
Caçadóres

Flánco Estádo Mayór

Frênte

Infantaría Ligeira Regulaméntos Rear rank Right

Left
Motions
Exercise

Lock Cock Butt

Muzzle
The barrel
Ramrod
Trigger
Platoon
Battalion

Wing Division

Riflemen Flank

Staff Front

Light infantry Regulations

Palávras de Comândo.

Sentído
Armas ao Hombro
Descançár sobre as Armas
Metér as Bayonétas
Apresentár as Armas
Calár as Bayonétas
Descançár as Armas
Tirár as Bayonétas
Cruzár as Armas
Preparár
Carregár
Tirár o Cartúcho
Escorvár

Tirár as Varétas Atuchár o Cartúcho

Armas á Cara Fôgo Military Words of Command.

Attention
Shoulder arms
Order arms
Fix bayonets
Present arms
Charge bayonets
Support arms
Unfix bayonets
Pile arms
Make ready
Load
Handle cartridge
Prime
Draw ramrods
Ram down cartridge
Present

Fire

Metér o cartúcho Fôgo por pellotões Fôgo de Filas Alto Formár em linha Fôgo obliquo Formár Márcha Ordem cerráda Desfilár Colúmna cerráda Meia vólta á esquerda

Voltár Avançár Cerrár as Filéiras

#### Navegação.

Navío Náo Náo de guérra Navío de cárga, or mercantil Navío veléiro

Navío rancéiro Galé Galeáça Galeáő Galeóta Comitre Fragáta Carráca Fústa Pináça Bárca de passágem Bárco Bárca Canba Gondóla

EsquifeChalúpa, or balándra Chalúpa pequéna

Cast about Firing by platoons File firing Halt To form in line Oblique firing Form March Close order To file Close column On your left backward wheel Wheel Advance Close the ranks

## Navigation.

A ship A large ship A line-of-battle ship A merchant-ship, a merchantman A very good sailer, or a ship that sails well A bad sailer A galley A galleass A galleon A galliot, a small galley The boatswain of a galley A frigate A carrack A foist A pinnace A ferry-boat A boat A bark, great boat A canoe Gondola, a small boat, much used in Venice A skiff A sloop A shallop

Bergantím Bálsa Capitánia Almirânta ArmádaFróta Esqu $\acute{a}$ draA bórdo  $P\hat{o}pa$ PróaPéças de prôa para dar caça ao inimígo Tartána  $Brul \delta te$ Falúa Batél, or bateíra Carav'elaSórte de patáxo pára servíço de húma náo de guérra Náo de línha Guárda cósta Galeóta da quál se lánçam as bômbas Navío que sérve pára andár a côrso CorsárioHyácte Navío de transpórte Náo da India Orientál Náo da India Occidental Sórte de embarcação pequêna Hollandéza de hum só mastro Navío pára levár carváő Embarcaçõens pequénas Embarcação, or bárco grande que sérve para levár fazéndas a bórdo Embarcação gránde, ou caravéla, que sérve pára commerceár pélla cósta Embarcação de avizo Paqu'eteBárco de pescár

Láncha

A brigantine, or brig
A float
The admiral's ship
The vice-admiral's ship
A fleet, a navy
A fleet of merchant ships
A squadron, part of a fleet
On board
The poop, stern, or steerage
The prow, or head
Chase guns

A tartan A fire-ship A felucca A small bark, a wherry A caravel A tender

A line-of-battle ship A guard-ship Bomb-ketch

A cruiser

A privateer Yacht A transport East-India-man West-India-ship A Dutch dogger

A collier Small craft A barge, a lighter

A coasting vessel

Advice-boat Packet-boat A fishing-boat Boat Rémos
Pá do rémo
Sentína
Lástro, or lásto
Lastár or langár lástro ao
navío
Mástro or árvore
Mástro gránde
Mástro de mezéna
Mástro do traquéte
Gurupés
Gávea

Quílha Vérga, or enténa Laíz or extremidádes das vérgas Pránchas, que cóbrem os costádos do navío da parte de fora Véla * . Véla méstra, or a véla do mastro grande Véla da Gávea Véla do joanéte do mástro gránde Papafigos Mezéna Gáta, or véla de címa da mezéna Traquéte Velácho Joanéte do traquéte Cevadéira Véla latina

Mastaréo da mezéna, or mastaréo da gáta Portinhóla Bandéiras Flémmulas or galhardetes

Fazér fórça de véla

Mastaréos

The blade of the oar The well Ballast To ballast a ship

A mast
The main mast
The mizen mast
The fore mast
The bowsprit, or boltsprit
The round-top, main-top,
or scuttle of a mast
The keel
A yard
The yard-arm

Side-planks, or side of a ship

A sail The main sheet

The main-top-sail Main-top-gallant-sail

The mizen and fore-sail Mizen-sail Mizen-top-sail

The fore-sail
The fore-top-sail
The fore-top-gallant-sail
The sprit-sail
A shoulder-of-mutton sail
To crowd the sail
The topmasts, or top-gallant-masts
Mizen-top-mast

A port-hole The colours Streamers, pendants

^{*} By vela is often meant the ship itself.

Agúlha de mareár
Bitácola
Costúras do navío
Léme
Cána do léme
Cubérta
Cubérta corrída
Escotílhas
Escotilháõ

Castéllo de pópa Castéllo de prôa Garrár a áncora

AncoraMetér a áncora na láncha. or bóte depóis de levantála. Ancora de rebôque Ancora de esperánça U'nhas da áncora Argóla da áncora Estár a áncora a pique Amárra Picár, or cortár as amár-Sônda, or prúmo Cutélos Maré Bosina Preparár hum navío, de, vélas, córdas, &c. Pilôto  $Escrivcute{a} ilde{o}$ Pilotágem Cárta de mareár Capitáõ Capitáő tenénte Contraméstre Marinheiro Camaróte

Marinheiro que he camar-

rancho Torménta

áda ou pertênce ao mésmo

The mariner's compass Bittacle The seams of a ship Helm, or rudder The whip, or whip-staff Deck Flush fore and aft The hatches; scuttles A room by the hatches, to keep the provisions The hind castle The fore castle To drive; or when a ship drags her anchor The anchor To boat the anchor

A kedger
Sheet anchor
The flooks of an anchor
The ring of an anchor
Is for the anchor to be a-peak
A cable
To cut the cables

The sounding lead
Studding sails
The tide
A speaking trumpet
To rig a ship

Pilot, or steersman
A purser
Pilotage
Sea-chart
A captain
First lieutenant
A boatswain
A sailor
A cabin
A messmate

A tempest

Borrásca Bonánça Calmaría Vénto em pôpa

Navío arrasádo em pôpa

Derróta Alár a bolína

Ir pela bolína

Nó da bolína  $Barlav \hat{e}nto$ Ganhár a barlavénto Barlaventeár, or deitár a barlavênto Sotavénto Escovens EscôtasVeláme, córdas, e o máis que he necessário pára preparár hum navío CórdaEnxárcias ArribárBombórdo Estib'ordoLó Metér de ló

Bômba
Dár á bómba
Bálde pára deitár ágoa na
bômba
Escúma que sáhe da bômba
depóis de ter tirádo a
ágoa
Navío, cúja ágoa se nao
póde tirár com a bômba
Mánga de cóuro por ónde
sáhe a ágoa da bômba
Bráço da bômba
Faról
Vénto

A storm Fair weather Calm The wind full a-stern, forewind A ship that sails before the wind The course, or way of a ship To sharp the main bowling, to haul up the bowling To tack upon a wind, sail upon a bowling The bowling knot Windward To get the wind

Leeward
Hawsers
Tacks
Tackle, or tackling, the rigging of a ship

To ply to windward

A rope
Shrouds
To put into a harbour
Larboard
Starboard
Loof
To loof, or keep the ship
nearer the wind
A pump
To pump
Pump-can

Pump-suck

A ship that is stoaked

Pump-dale

The pump handle Light, lantern, or lighthouse Wind Rósa da Agúlha, ou dos Vêntos.

Nórte

Norte 4ª a nordéste

Nor nordéste

Nordéste 4ª a nórte

Nordéste

Nordéste 4ª a léste

Les nordéste

Léste, 4ª a nordéste

Léste

L'este 4ª a su'este

Lés suéste

Suéste 4ª a léste

Suéste

Suéste 4ª a sul

Susuéste

Sul 4ª a suéste

Sul

Sul 4ª a sudoéste

Susudoéste

Sudoéste 4ª sul

Sudoéste

Sudoéste 4ª a oéste

Oés sudoéste

Oéste 4ª a sudoéste

Oéste

Oéste 4ª a noroéste

Oés noroéste

Noroéste 4ª a oéste

Noroéste

Noroéste 4ª a nórte

Nor noroéste

Nórte 4ª a noroéste

Vénto travessaõ, or travessia

Dar a embarcação a travéz Pairár

Esporaő Colhér hum cábo Largár mais cábo Abrír ágoa Fazér agoáda The Fly of the Mariner's Compass.

North N by E

N. by E. N. N. E.

N. E. by N.

N. E.

N. E. by E.

E. N. E.

E. by N.

East

E. by S.

E. S. E.

S. E by E.

S. E.

S. E. by S.

S. S. E.

S. by E.

South

S. by W. S. S. W.

S. W. by S.

S. W.

S. W. by W.

W. S. W.

W. by S. West.

W. by N.

W. N. W.

N. W. by W.

N. W.

N. W. by N.

N. N. W.

N. by W.

Contrary wind

To hull

To ply to and again in one's station

Beak

To coil a cable

To pay more cable

To leak, or spring a leak

To take in fresh water

Arpár hum navío
Fatéxa
Pedáço de lôna breáda que
se pôem ao redór domásto
e das bômbas para que a
ágoa nao penétre
Passadôr

Córda com que se prénde o bóte, or láncha á pôpa do navío Apíto Abadérnas Abíta Emproár

Guinár o navío Parte superior, or máis álta da pôpa de hum navío Apagafanóes Arreigádas Briões BarredôurasBartidôuroBast'ardosBigotaBotálos $Bracecute{a}r$  $Brcute{a}cos$ Bragueiro, or vergueiro Brandlpha esBuçardas Cachólas Cadáste Cadernál

Cavérnas Colhedôres Compassár hum navío Cossóuros Cráca

Cabrestante Dar cáça To grapple a ship Grapple Tarpaulin

A fidd, or pin of iron to open the strands of ropes Boat rope, or gift-rope

A boatswain's call
Nippers
Bits
To steer right forward, to
turn the prow straight
forward
To yaw, or make yaws
The tafferel

Leech-lines Puttocks Bunt lines Bow-studding-sails Boat's skit Parrels A dead-eye Studding-sail-booms To brace Braces The rudder's rope Back-stays Breast-hooks Cheeks Stand-post A large block with than one shive The floor-timbers Lines of the shrouds To trim a ship Trucks The foulness of the ship's bottom The capstan To chase

Cúrvas Mêsas da guarnição Enbornáes Pora Máca Convéz Camaróte do cirurgiao Cárga Ordem que o capita recébe para dár á véla A acçám de imbarcár se Desembárque | Embárgo Ancorágem Batálha navál Caravéla mexeriqueira, ou de espía Arriár, or arreár Arrear as vélas Arrear bandeira Levantár férro, levár áncoras, levar ferro, levar-se, or levar Léna

Boleár a péça

Péça de léva
Rebocár, ou levár de rebóque
Fazér costúras
Passágem
Passageíro
Viágem
Navió cújo capitaő tem
cártas de represálias
Querenár hum navío
Breár as costúras do navío
Dar á cósta
Soluçár a náo

Naufragár

Naufrágio Patraő, or méstre de náo The knees
Chain-wales
Scupper-holes
The hold of a ship
Hammock
Deck or quarter-deck
Cockpit
Freight
Cargo
Sailing orders

Embarkation
Landing
Embargo
Anchorage
Naval battle
A ship for espial, or look out

To veer
To strike sail
To strike the flag
To weigh anchor

The action of weighing or taking up the anchor
To move a gun towards starboard or larboard
The signal gun
To tow
To splice
Passage
Passenger
Voyage
Letters of marque

To careen a ship
To pay the seams of a ship
To run a-ground or on shore
Is for a ship to roll, or to
float in rough water
To suffer a wreck, to be
wrecked
Shipwreck
Shipmaster

Shipwright

Ship-boy

Carpentéiro de navíos Estaleíro Embarcár Embarcár

Gruméte

Rapáz que sérve cómo môço do navío
Rapáz que sérve ao capitaõ Calafáte
Calafetár hum navío
Calaféto
Arsenál, ou ribeíra das náos
Emmasteár hum navío

Remár Remadór Forçádo Despenseíro Marinheíros, e tóda a óutra génteque perténce ao navío Chúsma Guarnição da náo

O sobrecárga do navío
Balestílha
Quadránte
Outánte
De ré
Paravánte
Situação de húma cósta,
ilha, &c. a respeito de
qualquér outro lugár
Quarenténa
Balíza
Lárga
Amarár
Caçár a véla
Caceár hum navío

Cacear num navio

Langár hum navío áo már

Stocks
To ship
To go aboard, to take shipping
The meanest sort of sailors;
or servant to the sailors

A cabin-boy
A calker
To calk a ship
Oakham
An arsenal, a store-house, a
dock-yard
To fit a ship, or vessel, with
masts
To row
Rower
Galley-slave
Steward
The crew of a ship

Crew of galley slaves
Marines, soldiers who serve
on board of ships
Supercargo
Cross-staff
Quadrant
Hadley's quadrant
Aft
Fore
The bearing

Quarantine
Sea mark
Large
To bear off
To turn the sail to the wind
side
It is said of a ship that is hurried away from her course
by strong winds, tides, &c.

To launch a ship

Entrár com vénto frésco e
bóm no pôrto
Bórdo
Bórdo, or bánda
Navío de álto bórdo
Cáça
Présa or tomadía
Estár de vergadálto
Véntos demonção, ou geroes
Andár de consérva

Dar, ou fazêr hum bórdo

Estár á cápa, ou por-se á cápa

Do Commércio, e do que lhe pertênce.

Cônta Cônta de vênda Fazêr húma cônta Pedír côntas Dar á cônta Cônta corrênte Dinheíro de contádo Fundos Publicos O que negocêa em comprár e vendér accoens Balllpha ncoFárdo Bánco Banqueiro Québra Falído, or quebrádo Ajúste, or concerto TrócaPortadór ${\it Lançadôr}$ Létra de câmbio Negociár húma lêtra de cámbio Partida |

Conhecimênto

To bear in the harbour

Tack
Broadside
First rate man of war
Chace
Prize, or capture
To stand for the offing
Trade winds
To keep company together,
to sail under a convoy.
To tack the ship, or tack
about, or to bring her
head about
To lie by at sea, to back the
sails

Of Trade, and of Things relating to it.

Account
Account of sales
To cast up an account
To call to an account
To pay on account
Account current
Ready money
Stocks
Jobber

Balance
Bale
Bank
Banker
Bankruptcy
Bankrupt
Bargain
Barter
Bearer
Bidder
Bill of exchange, a draught
To negociate a bill of exchange
Parcel
Bill of lading

Escritúra de obrigação Guárdalívros or o que em húma cása de negócio tem a séu cárgo os livros

Occupação, or negócio

Compradôr Dinheiro

Pórte, or carrêto

Caxéiro or o que guárda a

caíxa Cénto

Certidao Câmbio Freguéz

Góstos Baráto Cáro

Rocibo da alfándega

Commissão
Mercancía
Compromísso
Consignação
Consúmo
Conteúdo
Contráto

Correspondênte

 $Pr\acute{e}co$ 

Alfândega

Guárdas d'alfándega Guárdas que estaō vigiándo até que os navíos estéjaō descarregádos

Feitoría Escritório Crédito Acredór Corrênte

Costúme Contratadôr

Tráfego, or negócio

Dívida Devedôr

Dinheíro desembolçádo

Descônto

Extrácto, or cópia

Bond, engagement Book-keeper

Business Buyer Cash Carriage

A cashier, or cash-keeper

Cent Certificate

Change, exchange

Chap, chapman, or customer

Charges Cheap Dear

Clearance, or cocket

Commission
Commodity
Compromise
Consignment
Consumption
Contents
Contract
Correspondent
Price, rate

Custom-house officers
Tidesmen, or tide waiters

Factory, settlement Counting-house

Creditor Current Custom Dealer

Dealing, traffick

Debt Debtor Disbursement Discount Docket

Depósito

Direitos que a alfandega torna a dar aos exportadores de certas fazendas, que ja os tinhao pago na supozição de serem para consumo interior: servindo isto para animar o

commercio Acredôr importúno

Cópia Corretôr

Corretôr de létras de câmbio Asseguradôr, or seguradôr

Endósso Endossadór Abarcadór

Levantamênto de préço Entrada or assénto no re-

gisto Equivalênte Exigência Despêza

Extracção, or exportação

Extorsão Feitor or

Feitôr, or commissario Féira

Fío, or arâme no qual se enfíao os papéis num escritório

Quátro, cínco, &c. por cênto Fréte

O que fréta hum navío Cabedál or quantía de dinheíro destinádo pára algúma côusa

Gánho
O que gánha
Fazêndas or effeitos
Estréa
Escritúra or lettra
Entráda

Importador Rénda Deposit Draw-back

Dun
Duplicate
A broker
Exchange-broker
Insurer or under-writer
Endorsement
Endorser
Engrosser
Enhancement

Entry
Equivalent
Exigency
Expence
Export or exportation
Extortion
Factor
Fair
File for papers

Four, five, &c. per cent. Freight A freighter Fund

Gain, or profit
Gainer
Goods, effects
Handsel
Hand-writing
A custom for imported
commodities
Importer
Income

Interesse [cio
Communicação, or commér
Inventário
Insufficiéncia, or fálta de
méyos para pagár
Factúra
A'rras
Escritúra de arrendamento

Arrendadór Lívro de razaō Empréstimo Dinheíro emprestádo Cárta

Sobrescrito da cárta Fechár húma cárta com si-

néte Mála em que o corréo tráz

as cártas Hypothéca Acredór hypothecário

Fiadór Pagaménto Fálta de pagaménto

Fálta de pagaménto Escríto de dívida Dôno

Pacóte Serapilheira Brabánte Máço de cártas Companheiro de

Companheiro de alguém no negócio, or sócio

Sociedade or companhía no negócio

Penhôr Contrato do segúro de mercanciás

Segúro Protestár húma létra Aceitár húma létra

Protésto Sacár húma létra Corréo abnde se lánção as

Corréo que léva cártas Pórte de cártas

cártas

Interest Intercourse Inventory Insolvency

Invoice
Jointure
Lease
Lessee
Ledger-book
Loan
Money lent
Letter

The direction of a letter
To make and seal up a
letter

Mail

Mortgage
Mortgagee
Bail
Payment
Non-payment
Note, or promissory note
Owner
Pack, a truss
Packcloth, wrapper
Packthread
Packet of letters
Partner

Partnership

Pawn or pledge Policy of insurance

Insurance
To protest a bill
To accept a bill
Protest
To draw a bill
Post-office

Post-man or letter carrier Postage

Dinhéiro que se pága aos marinheiros por térem carregádo o navío

Capitál Pérdas e dános Importáncia Importáncia líquida

Importancia liquida Proméssa

Bens Pontualidade Cômpra

Cômpra Recíbo

Recámbio Arbitro, or louvádo Louvaménto, or arbítrio

Regatáő Quitaçáő Reméssa

Vénda das cóusas por miúdo, cómo fázem os mercadóres de retálho

Mercador de retálho

Riquézas Vénda Padráõ Amóstra Sinéte Lácre

Ajustaménto de côntas Mercadôr que tem lója Lívro em que o mercadôr de

lója tem súas côntas

Contrabandista Fazênda de contrabândo

### Fazér contrabándo

Modélo, or fiél dos pézos e medídas públicas Armazém or Almazém Sobrescrevénte Sobscripção Tára Fazénda roím Primage

Principal, or capital Losses and damages

Proceed Neat proceed Promise

Property Punctuality Purchase

Receipt
Re-exchange
Referee or umpire

Reference Regrater Release Remittance

Retail

Retailer

Riches, wealth

Sale A pattern Sample

Seal Sealing-wax

Settlement of accounts

Shop-keeper Shop-book

Smuggler

Contraband, or prohibited goods, goods smuggled,

or run
To run, to smuggle prohibited goods

Standard measure

Warehouse Subscriber Subscription

Tare
Trash of goods

X

Rísco
Júros
Usurário
Usúra
Mercancías
Valór
Avaría
Direítos
Tribúto, or contribuição

Sísa Siseíro Cáes

Direito que se pága, por desembarcar fazendas no cáes

Collectór do mésmo direito, ou tribúto

Dízimos Dizimadôr, or dizimeíro Lôuça vidráda, sem ser da Chína

Mercador de atacado Vénda que se faz por partídas Risk
Interest
Usurer
Usury
Wares
Worth, or value
Average
Duties or custon

Duties or custom Cess, tribute Excise Exciseman Wharf Wharfage

Wharfinger

Tithes
Tithe-gatherer
Dutch-ware

Wholesale dealer Wholesale

Da Moéda, ou Dinheíro Portuguêz. Of the Portuguese Coin.

This mark * is prefixed to the imaginary money.

* Reál
Dés réis
Vintém
Tostáő, ou

Tostáő, ou 5 vintéms 4 Tostéens, ou hum crusado Crusado névo, ou 24 vinténs 8 Tostéens

Hum quárto de ouro, ou 12 tostoens

tostôens

* Milréis, ou 10 tostôens
16 Tostôens
Méya moéda de 6uro
3,200, ou 32 tostôens
Moéda da 6uro de 4,800
Péça de 6,400
Dóbraő ou 12,800

A ree, equal to  $\frac{27}{400}d$ . 10 rees,  $\frac{27}{40}d$ . A vintin,  $1\frac{7}{20}d$ . A testoon,  $6\frac{5}{4}d$ . A crusade, 2s. 3d. A new crusade, 2s.  $8\frac{2}{3}d$ . 8 testoons, 4s. 6d. 12 testoons, 6s. 9d.

A milree, 5s.  $7\frac{1}{2}d$ .
16 testoons, 9s.
Half moidore, 13s. 6d.
32 testoons, 18s.
A moidore, 1l. 7s.
Joanese, 1l. 16s.
128 testoons, 3l. 12s.

# COLLECÇAÕ A COLLECTION

DI

Adágios Portuguêzes.

Portuguese Proverbs.

A A'GOA o dá, a agoa o léva

Na ágoa envôlta pésca o pescadór

Está cômo o peíxe n' ágoa Trazér a ágoa pára o moinho

Levár ágou ao már As ágoas estáö báixas O que nao pode al sér, déves soffrér

Cómo cómo hum alárve Metér a pálha na albárda Alazaő tostádo ántes mórto que cançádo

Húma disgráça alcânça a butra

Estár na aldéa, e nao vér as cásas

Quem trabálha, tem alfáya Fállo-lhe em álhos, respéndeme em bugálhos Em témpo nevádo o álho vále hum cavállo WHAT is got over the devil's back will be spent under his belly; also lightly come, lightly go
To fish in troubled waters,

(to make a benefit of public troubles)

He lives in clover To bring grist to the mill

To carry coals to Newcastle He or she is at a low ebb What can't be cured must be endured

He eats like a thresher To cheat, to impose upon A dark sorrel horse will die

before he'll jade One mischief draws on an-

We say, you can't see wood for trees: or to be like the butcher that looked for his knife when he had it in his mouth

He that works has furniture I talk of chalk, and you of cheese

Garlick in the foggy weather is as good as a horse; it means that garlick is a good defence for travellers against dampness and cold weather Têzo como hum álho

Súa álma, súa pálma Na almoéda tem a bárba quéda

Pagár os áltos de vasío

Quem áma a beltráő, áma a séu caő

Cáda qual áma sêu semelhânte

Também os ameaçádos cómem páő

Côntas de pérto, e amigos de lônge

Tam bom he Pedro cômo séu âmo

Furtár o carneíro, e dar os pés pello amôr de Déos

Nem hum dédo faz maő, nem húma andorinha veráő

Levár pálhas, e arálhos Na aréa abérta o jústo pêcca

De hum argueiro, fazér. hum cavalleiro

Com árte, e com engáno se víve méyo ánno; com engáno, e com árte, se víve a butra párte

Quem a bôa árvore se chêga, bôa sômbra o cóbre

A'sno môrto, ceváda áo rábo

A'sno que tem fóme, cárdos cóme

As stiff as garlick; that is a healthy, strong, robust person

As you brew, even so bake At a sale keep your beard on your chin still; that is, let not your beard wag too fast in bidding, lest you overbid and repent

To have but little or no

sense at all

Love me, love my dog

Like will to like, or like loves like

Threatened folks eat bread; we say, threatened folks live long

Even reckonings make long friends

Like master, like man

We say, to steal the goose and give the giblets in alms

One swallow does not make summer. Una hirundo non facit ver, says Horace

To sweep stakes

That is, it is opportunity that makes the thief

We say, to make mountains of mole-hills

That is, all a man's life is a cheat

That is, he that relies on good worthy people, reaps a benefit

A day after the fair, or after meat, mustard

We say, hungry dogs will eat dirty pudding

Sôpa de mel não se fez pára a bôca do ásno

Máis quéro ásno que me léve, que cavállo que me derrúbe

Máis val má avénça que bôa sentença

Naõ deites azeite no fôgo

Da máő á bóca se pérde a sópa

Em bôca cerráda nao éntra môsca

Quem tem bốca vái a Rôma

Pélla bôca môrre o peixe

Cáda bofarinheiro lôuva séus alfinétes

Quem tem quátro, e gásta cínco, nao ha mistér bolsa nem bolsinho

Cavár vái pella vínha por onde vái a máy, vái a fílha

Matár dóus coélhos de húma cajadáda

Quem cânta, seus máles espánta

Deitár a cápa a tôuro

Vîva el-réy, e dá cá a cápa

Good things are not fit for fools

Better be an old man's darling, than a young man's warling

It is better to agree at any rate than go to law

Do not throw oil into the fire

Much falls between the cup and the lip

A close mouth catches no flies

That is, a man may go any where, if he has language to speak for himself and ask his way

Much talking brings much woe

Every man thinks his own geese swans

He that hath four and spends five, hath no need of a purse

Like father like son

We say, to kill two birds with one stone

The person who sings makes easy his misfortunes; that is, singing causes him not to reflect on it so much as he otherwise would

To throw one's cloak at the bull; that is, to venture all a man has, to save his life

Let the king live, and give me the cloak; that is spoken of persons who, under a pretence of authority, rob and plunder other people, and at the Andár de cápa cahida

O cáo com ráiva de séu dôno tráva

Quem com chens se lança, com púlgas se levanta A carne de lobo dente de car

Quem faz cása na práça, huns dízem que he alta, butros que he baixa

A cavállo dádo não ólhes o dênte

Quem quer cavállo sem tácha, sem elle se ácha

Cóbra bóa fáma, e deita-te a dormir

Fazér as côntas sem a hóspeda

Do contádo cóme o lóbo

Em cása de ladráã naõ fálles em córda

Do couro lhe sahem as corréas same time pretend they are doing justice to the power reposed in their hands

To be behind-hand in the

world

A mad dog bites his own master; there is no trusting to madmen, or people in a rage

We say, lie with beggars and you will get fleas

That is, to return railing for railing; or, as our modern proverb says, give him a Rowland for his Oliver; the Latins say, par pari referre

That is, a man in public business can't please every body; or, as Solon says, 'tis rare that statesmen can all parties please

Never look in the mouth of

a gift horse

'Tis a good horse that never stumbles

When your name is up, you may lie a-bed till noon

To reckon without the hostess; or, as we say, the host

The wolf eats of what is counted; that is, thieves will steal, though they know it will be missed, much more if they think it will not

You should not mention a halter to any whose relations or friends have suffered by it; that is, no man should be hit in the teeth of his disgrace

The thongs come out of his skin; that is, he pays for it

Cortár o vestido confórme o pánno

Cría o côrvo, tirárvos-há o olho

Tânta cúlpa tem o ladráõ cômo o consentidôr

Dádivas quebrantão pénhas

Melhór he fazér de bálde que estár debálde

Deitar azeite no fôgo

Nao he o démo tam feio cômo o píntao

Primeiro são dêntes, que parêntes

Lá vái a língoa, ônde o dénte grita

Quándo cúidas metér o dénte em segúro, toparáz o duro

Dár com a lingoa nos déntes

Quem não fálla, não o ôuve Déos

Ventúra te dê Dêos, filho; que sabêr pôuco te básta

Cáda qual por si, e Déos por tódos

To cut one's coat according to the cloth

It is said of a person that, being received in distress, defrauds or grows too great for him that entertained him

The receiver is as bad as the thief

Gifts break rocks; that is, kindness overcomes the hardest hearts; and bribes or presents corrupt the most resolved

It is better to work for nothing than to be lazy and do nothing at all

To make bad worse. Horace says, Oleum addere camino

We say, the lion is not so fierce as his picture

We say, near is my coat, but nearer is my skin, &c. Terence says, Heus proximus sum egomet mihi

To scratch where it itches

Harm watch, harm catch.

Horace says,

-et fragili quærens illidere dentem -Offendet solido---

To contradict one's self, to belie

A man may hold his tongue in an ill time; also spare to speak and spare to speed

God give you good luck, child, for a little learning will serve your turn; because it is fortune that raises men morethan merit

Every one for himself, and God for all

Em bons días, bôas óbras

Para día de sao ceréjo

Túdo póde o dinheíro O hómem propôem, e Déos dispôem

Dórme cômo hum arganáz A bom entendedőr pőucas palávras bastaő

Gáto escaldádo da ágoa fría ha mêdo

No escudellár verás quem te quér bem, ou mal

Esmolóu são Matthéus, esmolóu pára os séus Não ha melhór espélho que o amígo vélho

Nem estôpa com tiçõens, nem molhér com varôens

Fallár sem cuidár, he atirár sem afrontár

Fálla pôuco e bem, térte háő por alguém

Quëm a fâma tem perdida, môrto ánda nésta vída

A quem má fáma tem, nem accompánhes, nem dígas bem

Aproveitadôr de farélos, esperdiçadôr de farínha

The better days the better deeds

We say, when two Sundays come together, that is never

Money governs the world Man proposes, and God disposes

He sleeps like a dormouse A word to the wise is enough

We say, a burnt child dreads the fire

That is, people's affections are discovered by their liberality

Charity begins at home

There is no better lookingglass than an old friend; that is, such a one will not flatter a man, but tell him the truth

That is, conversation of women is dangerous; it is not good jesting with edged tools

To let one's tongue run, without reflecting on what one says, is like shooting at random

Talk little and well, and you'll be counted somebody; that is, you'll be esteemed

He who has lost his reputation is as good as dead whilst living

Do not keep company with, nor be fond of, one that has an ill name

That is, one that saves at the spiggot and lets it run out at the bung; also, penny wise and pound foolish Nao fázem bôa farinha

Quem má a faz nélla jáz Agóra dá pão e mel, e depôis dará pão e fel

Lingoa dôce cómo mel, e coração amargoso cómo fel Batér o férmo quindo está

Batér o férro quândo está quênte

Quem com férro máta, a férro mórre

Carregádo de férro, carregádo de médo

Quem te faz festa, náő soendo fazér, ou te quer enganár, ou te ha mistér

Náō fíes, nem profíes, nem arréndes, vivirás éntre as géntes

Mijár claro, dar húma fíga ao médico

Se não bébe na tavérna, fólga nélla

Áchou fôrma pára o séu sapáto

Não sejáis fornêiro se téndes a cabeça de manteíga

A'o hómem ousádo a fortúna lhe dá a máõ Rôupa de francêzes

Cahír da frigideira nas brasas They can't set their horses together

Self do self harm

After sweet meat comes sour sauce

An honey tongue, an heart of gall

To beat the iron whilst it is hot, or to make hay whilst the sun shines

He who kills by the sword dies by the sword

He who is loaded with iron is loaded with fear; that is, he who loads himself with armourand weapons against danger, discovers he is much afraid

He that makes more of you than he is wont to do, either designs to cheat you, or stands in need of you

Do not trust, nor contend, nor hire, and you'll live among men; that is, you'll live peaceably

Tell the truth and shame the devil

We say, he does not smoke but smokes

He has found a last to his shoe; that is, he has met with his match

Do not undertake to be a bakerifyour head is made of butter; that is, do not take upon you any business you are unfit for

Fortune favours the bold

Things left at random, or exposed to be pillaged

To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire

Dizem os filhos ao soalheiro, o que ouvem dizer a seus pays ao fumeiro

Pérto vái o fúmo da châma

Quem húma vêz fúrta, fiél núnca

Mal vái ao fúso quando a barba não ánda em cima

Cáda térra com séu úso, cáda róca com séu fúso Quántas cabégas, tántas carapúças

Quem lhe doêr a cabéça que a apérte

Se quéres sabér quem hé o villaő, mételhe a vára na máő

Não ha rósa sem espínhos

Andár, andár, vír morrér á beíra

Quem naõ déve, naõ téme Quem quândo pode, naõ quér, quândo quér, naõ pode

Hómem honrádo nao ha mistér gabádo

Hómem gránde, bêsta de páo

Little pitchers have great ears

We say, there is no smoke without some fire

He who once steals, is never trusty; or, once a thief, always a thief

Alas for the spindle when the beard is not over it! By the spindle is meant the woman, and by the beard is meant the man

So many countries, so many customs

Several men, several minds

We say, if any fool finds the cap fit him, let him put it on

Set a beggar on horseback, and he will ride to the devil

There is no rose without thorns, there is no sweet without some sweat

To eat an whole ox and faint at the tail. This proverb is spoken when any body falls short of a thing after having used all his endeavours

Out of debt out of danger It is good to make hay while the sun shines

We say, a good face needs no band

This proverb intimates, that things are not to be valued by their bulk, but according to their intrinsic worth and value; and so we say, a lark is better than a kite Debáixo de má cápa jáz bom bebedőr

Quem múito abráça, pôuco apérta

No açõugue, quem mai fálla, mal õuve

Quem em mais álto náda, mais présto se afoga

Hóspede com sol, ha honôr, Hóspeda formósa, dáno faz á bólsa

O hóspede e o peixe aos três días féde

Hórta sem ágoa, cása sem telhádo, molhér sem amôr, marido sem cuidádo, de gráça he cáro

Hônra ao bôm para que te hônre, e ao máo pára que te nao deshônre

Hônra hé dos âmos, a que se faz aos criádos

Officio de conselho, hônra sem provéito

Hómem apercebido, méyo combatído

A tattered cloak may cover a good drinker; that is, men are not to be judged by outward appearance

All grasp, all lose; or covet all, and lose all

He that speaks knavishly shall hear knavishly. Terence says, Qui pergit ea, quæ vult, dicere, ea, quæ non vult, audiet

This is, the highest charges are the more liable and nearer to the downfall

First come, first served A beautiful hostess, or landlady, is bad for the purse

Fresh fish, and new come guests, smell when they are three days old

That is, a garden without water, a house untiled, a wife without love, and a careless husband, are all alike, being all stark nought

Honour a good man, that he may honour you; and an ill man, that he may not dishonour you

dishonour you
The honour done to servants
redounds to their masters

An office in the council is honour without profit; that is, to be of the council of a town, by which nothing is got in Portugal

A man that is prepared, has half the battle over

# DIÁLOGOS

#### FAMILIARES.

#### FAMILIAR

## DIALOGUES.

TÈNHA vm. múito bons días
Cômo está vm.? ou cômo passa vm.?
Bem, nao muito-bém, vôu passándo
Muito bem para servir a vm.
A's órdens de vm.
Fico-lhe muito obrigádo Agradecído
Cômo está, ou pássa o senhôr séu irmáo?
Muito bem, não muito bém

Elle terá gôsto de ver a vm. Nao teréi témpo para hir a vélo hôje Fáça favôr de assentár-se Dá húma cadéira ao senhôr

Náõ hé necessário
Tenho que hír a fazér húma
visita aquí nesta visinhánça
Vm. tem préssa
E'u lógo voltarêi

Adéos méu senhôr Fólgo de vêr a vm. com bôa saúde · Bêijo as maõs de vm. Sôu criádo de vm. Sôu muílo seu criádo GOOD morrow, sir

How do you do, sir?

Well; not very well; so, so

Very well to serve you At your service I am obliged to you I thank you How does your brother do?

He is very well; not very well
He will be glad to see you I shall have no time to see him to-day
Be pleased to sit down
Give a chair to the gentle-

man
There's no occasion
I must go to make a visit in
the neighbourhood

You are in haste
I'll be back, or return presently
Farewell, sir
I am glad to see you in good health
I kiss your hand
I am your servant
Your most humble servant

II. Para fazêr húma Visíta de Manhaã.

ONDE está téu ámo? Aínda dórme? Naő, senhór, élle está acor-

dádo

Está élle ja levantádo? Naő, senhôr, élle aínda

está na cáma Que vergônha de estár aín-

dana cáma a éstas hóras! Ontem á nóite fui para a

cáma taö tárde, que nao me púde levantár cédo esta manhaō

Que fizérao vm^{\opera}. depôis de céa?

Dançámos, cantámos, rimos, e jugámos

A que jôgo? A'os céntos

Quánto me pêza de o naõ têr sabido!

Quem ganhou? quem perdéo?

Eu ganhéi dez moédas Até que hóras jugáraõ

vmª:? Até dúas hóras depóis da

méya nôite A que hóras fôi vm. para a cáma?

A's três, ás três kóras e méya

Que hóras sao?

Que hóras lhe parêce a vm. que sêjaõ

Parêceme que apênas sao óito

Ším! ôito! ja déraő dêz

Entáő he preciso que me levánte quánto mais depréssa pudér II. To visit in the Morning.

WHERE is your master? Is he asleep still? No, sir, he is awake

Is he up? No, sir, he is still a-bed

What a shame 'tis to be abed at this time a-day

I went to had so late last

I went to bed so late last night I could not rise early this morning

What did you do after supper?

We danced, we sung, we laughed, we played

At what game? We played at piquet

How grieved am I, I did not know it! Who won? who lost?

I won ten moidores
Till what hour did you
play?
Till two in the morning

At what o'clock did you go to bed?

At three, half an hour after three

What's o'clock?

What do you think it is?

Scarce eight, I believe yet

How! eight! it has struck

Then I must rise with all speed

#### III. Para vestir-se

QUEM está ahí? Que quér vm.?

Despáxa-te, acénde o lúme, e véste-me
Dá-me a mínha camísa
Eila aquí está, senhôr
Naő está quénte, está muito fría
Eu a aquentaréi, se vm.
quizér

Não, não; tráze-me as mínhas méyas de séda Húma déllas está rôta Da-lhe hum pônto, concérta-a

Dei-a ao que as concérta

Fizéste-bem
O'nde estaő as mínhas
chinélas
O'nde está a mínha rôupa
de chámbre?
Pentéa-me
Di-me o mén lénco

Dá-me o méu lénço Eís aquí hum lavádo Dá-me o que está na mínha algibéira

Dei-o à lavandéira, élle estáva sújo [rôupa? Trôuxe élla ja a mínha Sím, senhôr, enaőfáltanada Tráze-me os méus calçõens Que vestído quer vm. para hôje?

O mésmo de ôntem O alfaíate ha de trazér lógo o séu vestído [hé Bátem á pórta, vé lá quem

Hé o alfaiáte Déixa-o entrár III. To dress one's self.

WHO is there?
What will you please to have?
Be quick, make a fire, dress

me
Give me my shirt
Here it is, sir
'Tis not warm, 'tis quite
cold

No, no; bring me my silk stockings One of them is torn Stitch it a little, mend it

If you please I'll warm it

I have given it to the stocking mender You have done right Where are my slippers?

Where is my night gown

Comb my head
Give me my handkerchief
Here is a clean one
Give me that which is in my
pocket
Leave it to the washer-wo-

I gave it to the washer-woman, it was foul Has she brought my linen? Yes, there wants nothing Bring me my breeches What clothes will you wear to-day?

Those I wore yesterday
The taylor will bring your
cloth suit presently
Somebody knocks, see who

It is the tailor Let him come in IV. O Senhôr e o Alfaiáte.

TRAZĖIS o mėu vestido?

Sim, senhôr, eilo aquí
Há múito témpo que estóu
esperándo por élle
Naō púde vír até agóra
Naō estáva acabádo
Aínda naō estáva forrádo
Quer vm. vestír a casáca
para vér se lhe está bém?
Vejámos se está bem feita

Ténho para mim que lhe hája de agradár Paréce-me muito comprida

He costúme, agóra de trazélas compridas Abotoái-a

He múito apertáda Assím déve sér para que lhe estéja bém ao côrpo

Naő saő as mángas demasiádaménte lárgas? Naő, senhôr, estaő-lhe ad-

mirávelménte Os calçõens saõ múito apertádos ?

E'sta he a móda de agóra Este vestído está-lhe bízarramente

He múito cúrto, múito comprido, múito grânde, múito pequêno

Téndes feito a vossa con-

Não, senhor, não tíve têm-

Trazei-a amanhaã, e pagárvos hei IV. The Gentleman and the Tailor.

DO you bring my suit of clothes?

Yes, sir, here it is You make me wait a great while

I could not come sooner It was not finished

The lining was not sewed Will you please to try the close coat on?

Let us see whether it be well made

I believe it will please you

It seems to me to be very long

They wear them long now

Button it' It is too close

To fit properly, it ought to be close

Are not the sleeves too wide?

No, sir, they fit very well

The breeches are very narrow

That is the fashion

This suit becomes you mighty well

'Tis too short, too long, too big, too little

Have you made your bill?

No, sir, I had no time

Bring it to-morrow, I'll pay you

## V. Para almoçár.

TR A'ZE-nos algúma cóusa para almoçár Sim, senhór, ha linguíças e pastelínhos Gósta vm. de presúnto?

Sim, tráze-o; comerêmos húma talháda délle
Estênde hum guardanápo sobre aquélla mésa
Dá-nos prátos, fácas, e gárfos
Láva os cópos
Dá húma cadeíra ao senhór
Assénte-se vm. assénte-se ao pé do lúme
Naő ténho frío, aquí ficaréi

múito bem Vejámos se o vínho he bôm

Dá cá aquélla garráfa com aquélle cópo

Fáça favôr de provár aquélle vínho

Cômo lhe agráda; que díz vm. délle?

Não hé máo, he múito bôm Eis aquí as linguíças, tíra aquélle práto

Côma vm. linguiças

Ja comí algumas, éllas sao múito bôas

Dá-me de bebér A' saúde de vm.

Bom provéito fáça a vm. Dá de bebér ao senhôr

E'u bebí aínda agóra Os pastelínhos éraő bem bóns

Estávão hum pôuco máis cozídos que devíão estár

To breakfast.

BRING us something for breakfast

Yes, sir, there are some sausages and petty-patees

Do you choose the gammon of bacon?

Yes, bring it; we will eat a slice of it

Lay a napkin on that table

Give us plates, knives, and forks

Rinse the glasses

Reach the gentleman a chair Sit down, sir; sit by the fire

I am not cold, I shall be very well here

Let us see whether the wine be good

Give me that bottle and a glass

Taste that wine, pray

How do you like it? what say you to it?

It is not bad, it is very good Here are the sausages, take away this plate

Eat some sausages, sir
I have eat some, they are

very good
Give me some drink
Your health, sir

Much good may it do you Give the gentleman some drink

I drank but just now

The petty-patees were very good

They were baked a little too much

Vm. não cóme

Ténho comído tánto, que nao poderéi jantár

Vm. está zombándo, vm. naő tem comído náda

Ténho comído com múito gôsto, tánto das linguiças cômo do presúnto You do not eat

I have eat too much, I shall not be able to eat any dinner

You only jest, you have eat nothing at all

I have eat very heartily both of sausages and gammon of bacon

# VI. Para fallár Portuguêz.

CÔMO vái vm. com o séu Portuguéz?

Está vm. ja múito adiantádo nélle?

Aínda me fálta múito; nao séi quási náda

Dízem porém que vm. o fálla múito bém

Prouvéra a Déos que assím fôsse!

Os que dízem isso, estáo muito enganádos

Estéja vm. na certéza que assím mo disséraõ

Pósso fallár algúmas palávras que aprendí de cór

E unicamente o que hé necessário para começár a fallár

O começár não he bastánte he preciso que vm. acábe

Falle vm. sémpre ou bém ou mál

Tênho mêdo de dar êrros

Nao ténha vm. médo; a língoa Portuguêza nao hé diffícil

Conhéço isso, e também que élla he múito engraçada Que felicidade sería a mí-

nha se êu a soubésse bêm!

VI. To speak Portuguese.

HOW goes on your Portuguese?

Are you much improved in it now?

Far from it; I know nothing almost

It is said, however, you speak it very well

Would to God it were true!

Those that say so are much mistaken

I assure you I was told so

I can say a few words which I have learnt by heart

Only so much as is necessary to begin to speak

The beginning is not all, you must make an end

Be always speaking, whether well, or ill

I am afraid to commit blunders

Never fear; the Portuguese language is not hard

I know it; and that it has abundance of graces

How happy should I be, if I were master of it!

A applicação hé o único méyo para aprendê-la Quánto témpo há que vm.

aprênde?

Apênas há hum mêz Cômo se cháma o sêu més-

tre?

Châma-se---

Há muito témpo que o conhéço

Elle tem ensinádo a múitos dos meus amígos

Nao lhe diz élle ser preciso que fálle sémpre Portuguéz?

Sim, senhôr, assím me diz múitas vêzes

Pôis, porquê naö fálla vm.? Com quem quér vm. que éu fálle

Com os que fallárem com vm.

E'u quizéra fallár, mas nao me atrêvo

He preciso que vm. naō ténha médo, nem se péje dos que o ouvirem fallár Application is the only way to learn it

How long have you been learning?

Scarce a month yet

What is your master's name?

His name is-

I have known him a great while

He has taught several friends of mine

Does not he tell you that you must constantly talk Portuguese?

Yes, sir, he often tells me so

Why do not you talk then? Who would you have me talk with?

With those who shall talk to you

I would fain talk, but dare

You must not be afraid, you must be bold

## VII. Do Têmpo.

## QUE têmpo faz?

O témpo está admirável
O témpo está roím
Faz frío? faz cálma?
Naō faz frío, naō faz cálma
Chóve? naō chóve?
Naō o créyo
O vénto está mudádo
Terémos chúva
Hóje naō há de chovér
Chóve, Chóve a cántaros
Está nevándo
Trovéja

# VII. Of the Weather.

WHAT sort of weather is it?
It is fine weather
It is bad weather
Is it cold? is it hot?
It is not cold, it is not hot
Doesitrain? doesit not rain?
I do not believe it
The wind is changed
We shall have rain
It will not rain to-day
It rains, it pours
It snows
It thunders

Cáhe pédra
Relampaguéa
Faz múita cálma
Geóu a nóite passáda?
Naő, senhór, mas agóra
está geándo
Paréce-me que há nevoéiro

Vm. naõ se engána, assim

Vm. tem hum gránde catarro or deflúxo Há quínze días que o ténho

Que hóras sao?-

He cédo, naõ he tárde He témpo de almoçár?

Póuco fálta para sérem hóras de jantár

Que farémos depôis de jantár?

Darémos hum passéyo, or irémos passear . Vámos dár húma vólta

Não vámos fóra com éste têmpo

VIII. Para perguntár que Nóvas há.

QUE vai de nóvo? or que nóvas há?

Sábe vm. algúma côusa de nôvo?

Não ténho ouvido náda de nôvo

Deque sefálla pélla cidáde? Naő se fálla de náda

Não téndes ouvido fallár de guérra?

Não ouço fallár náda dísso Porém fálla-se de hum cérco

Fallôu-se nísso, mas nao hé verdáde

It hails
It lightens
It is very hot
Has it freezed last night?

No, sir, but it freezes now

There appears to me to be a great fog

You are not mistaken, it is very true

You have caught a violent cold

I have had it this fortnight What's o'clock?

'Tis early, 'tis not late Is it breakfast-time?

'Twill be dinner-time immediately

What shall we do after dinner?

We'll take a walk

Let us take a turn now We must not go abroad this weather

VIII. To enquire after News.

WHAT news is stirring?

Do you know any news?

I have heard none

What's the talk of the town? There's no talk of any thing Have you heard no talk of war?

I have heard nothing of it There's a talk however of a siege

It was so reported, but it is not true

A'ntes péllo contrário fállase de páz Assím o créyo Que se diz na córte? Fálla-se de húma viágem

Fálla-se de húma viágem Quándo vos paréçe que el réy partirá?

Nao se sábe. Nao se díz quándo

O'nde, or para onde se díz que élle irá?

Hûns dizem que irá para Flándres, e ôutros para Alemánha

E que diz a Gazéta? E'u nao a li

He verdáde o que se díz dó Sr.——?

Póis que se diz délle? Dízem que está ferido mortalménte

Múito me pesaría dísso; élle he hum hómem de bem

Quem o ferío? Dous marôtos que o investirao

Sábe-se o porqué?

A notícia que corre hé, que déu num délles hum bofetaõ

E'u naõ créyo îsso; nem éu taõ pôuco

Eílo vái, cêdo saberêmos a verdáde

## IX. Para escrevêr.

DA' I-ME húma fólha de papél, húma pénna, e húma pénna, e húma pôuca de tínta l'de ao méu quárto, e acharcís em címa da mésa túdo o que vos fór preciso Nao há pénnas

On the contrary there's a talk of peace
I believe so
What say they at court?
They talk of a voyage

When do you think the king will set out?

'Tis not known, they do not say when

Where do they say he'll go?

Some say into Flanders, others into Germany

And what says the Gazette? I have not read it

Is it true what's reported of Mr. ——?

What of him?

They say he is mortally wounded

I should be sorry for that, he's an honest man

Who wounded him?

Two rogues that set upon him

Is it known upon what account?

The report is, that he gave one of them a box on the ear

I don't believe it. Nor I neither

However we shall soon know the truth

#### IX. To write.

GIVE me a sheet of paper, a pen, and a little ink

Step to my closet, you'll find on the table whatever you want
There are no pens

Há gránde quantidáde dellas na escrivanínha Naõ prestão para náda Lá há óutras Naõ estaõ aparádas O'ndeestá o vósso canivéte? Sabéis vós aparár pénnas? E'u apáro-as a mêu môdo E'sta naõ está má

Em quánto acábo ésta cárta, fazéime o favôr de fechár as ôutras, e fazér hum máço déllas

Que séllo quér vm. que éu lhe pônha?

Sélla-o com o méu sinéte, or com as mínhas ármas Com que lácre quer vm. que as fêche?

Fechái-as com o vermélho ou com o préto; séja quál fór naő impórta

Tem vm. pôsto a dáta? Paréce-me que sim, mas aínda nao a assinéi

A quántos estámos hôje do méz?

A outo, a déz, a quínze, a vinte

Pónde o sobrescrito ? O'nde está a aréa ? Vós núnca téndes aréa

Ahí há algúma no areéiro Ahí está o séu criádo; quér vm. que élle léve as cártas ao corréo?

Léva as mínhas cártas ao corréo, e nao te esquéças de pagár o pórte

Não ténho dinhéiro

Ahí está húma moéda de buro

Vái depréssa, e vem lógo

There are a great many in the standish

They are good for nothing

There are some others
They are not made
Where is your penknife?

Can you make pens?
I make them my own way

This is not bad

While I make an end of this letter, do me the favour to make a packet of the rest

What seal will you have me put to it?

Seal it with my cypher, or coat of arms

What wax shall I put to it?

Put either red, or black, no matter which

Have you put the date?
I believe I have, but I have
not signed it

What day of the month is this?

The eighth, the tenth, fifteenth, twentieth

Put the address

Where is the powder?

You never have powder or sand

There's some in the sand box There's your servant, will you let him carry the letters to the post-office?

Carry my letters to the postoffice, and don't forget to pay postage

I have no money There's a moidore

Go quickly, and return as soon as possible

X. Para comprár.

X. To buy.

QUE quér vm.?

Quéro hum bom pánno fino para hum vestido ,

Ténha vm. a bondáde de entrár, e verá o máis bélo pánno que há em Lôndres

Deixe-me ver o melhór que vm. tem

Aquí tem vm. hum. excellénte, que agóra se costúma trazér

He hum bom pánno, mas a côr nao me agráda

Ahí tem vm. butra péça que tem a cor máis clára

Agrádame a cór, mas o panno nao he fórte, nao tem córpo

Véja ésta péça; vm. naő achará em nenhúma párte öutra taő bóa cómo élla

Quânto péde vm. por cáda ' ána?

O séu jústo préço he —— Sr. nao he méu costúme pórme a regateúr; fáca-me favór de dizér me o último préço

Ja dísse a vm. que aquélle he o séu jústo prêço

He múito cáro, dar lhe héi a vm.—

Não pósso abatér hum ceitíl

Vm. nao há de vendér por ésse préço

Vm. quíz sabér o último preço, e eu disse-lho

WHAT do you want, sir?
What would you please to have?

I want a good fine cloth to make me a suit of clothes

Be pleased to walk in, sir, you'll see the finest in London

Shew me the best you have

There's a very fine one, and what's worn at present

'Tisa good cloth, but I don't like the colour

There's another lighter piece

I like that colour well, but the cloth is not strong, 'tis too thin

Look at this piece, sir, you'll not find the like any where else

What do you ask for it an ell?

It is fairly worth —

Sir, I am not used to stand haggling; pray tell me your lowest price

I have told you, sir, 'tis worth that

'Tis too dear, I'll give you—

I can't bate a farthing

You must not charge that price

You asked me the lowest price, and I have told you

Hóra vámos, córte vm. lá dúas ánas délle

Assegúro-lhe a vm. cômo hómem de bem que sôu, que nao gánho náda com

Ahí tem vm. cínco moédas de ouro, dê-me a demasía

Ténha a bondáde de dárme butra em lugar desta, porquê naõ he de pêzo

Ahí esta ôutra

A Déos, criádo de vm.

Come, come, cut off two ells of it

I protest, on the word of an honest man, I don't get any thing by you

There's five moidores, give me the change

Be pleased, sir, to let me have another for this, it wants weight

There's another

Farewell; sir, your servant

#### XI. Para húma Jornáda.

QUANTAS légoas-há daquí a N.?

Ha buto légoas

Nós nao poderémos chegár lá hôje, hé múito tárde

Naõ hé senáõ méyo día, vmes ainda têm bastânte, témpo

Hé a estráda b6a?

Naõ he múito bôa pássaõse bósques e ríos

Há algúm perígo nélla?

Naõ há notícias dísso; hé estráda reál em que se encôntra génte a câda pásso

Pôis naõ dízem que há ladrôens nos bósques?

Não ha de que têr mêdo, nem de día, nem de nôite  $Por\ \emph{onde}\ se\ v\'ai$  ?

Quándo vm: chegárem ao pé do outéiro, he preciso, que tómem á mao dirêita Pôis nao hé necessário,

subir hum outéiro?

## XI. For a Journey.

HOW many leagues is it from this place to N.?

It is eight leagues

We shall not be able to get thither to day, it is too late

It is not more than twelve o'clock, you have time enough yet

Is the road good?

So, so; there are woods and rivers to pass

Is there any danger upon that road?

There's no talk of it, it is a highway, where you meet people every moment

Do not they say there are robbers in the woods?

There's nothing to be feared either by day or night

Which way must one take? When you come near the

hill, you must take to the right hand

Is it not necessary to ascend a hill then?

Não, Sr. não há butro outeiro senão húma pequêna ladéira, (or descída) no bósque

Cústa a atinár com o camínho péllo méyo dos

bósques?

Vm^{es} naõ pódem errá-lo Lógo que vm^{es} sahírem do bósque, lémbrem-se de tomár á maõ esquêrda

Vm^{es} múitos ánnos, fico-lhe múito obrigádo

Vames esames

Vámos, vámos, senhôres, tomémos hum cavállo

Onde está o marquéz? Elle foi adiánte

E'lle há de estár esperándo por vós lógo alí fóra da cidáde

Fiquem-se embóra, senhôres, a Déos

Fáção vmº múito bôa jornáda

## XII. Da Cêa e da Pousáda.

COMQUE assím estámos chegádos á estalágem Apeémo-nos, senhôres Péga nos cavállos déstes senhôres, e tráta délles

Vejámos agóra o que vm.
nos há de dár para ceár
Hum capaō, méya dúzia de
pómbos, húma saláda,
seis codornízes, e húma
dúzia do calhándras

Quérem vmes mais algúma côusa?

I'sto he bastánte, dái-nos algúm vínho que séja bóm, e húma sobremésa No, sir, there is no other hill but a little declivity in the wood

Is it a difficult way through the woods?

You can't lose your way
As soon as you are out of
the wood, remember to
keep to the left hand
I thank you, sir, and am very

much obliged to you Come, come, gentlemen, let's take a horse

Where is the marquis? He is gone before

He'll wait for you just out of the town

Farewell, gentlemen, farewell

I wish you a very good journey

# XII. Of Supper and Lodging.

SO, we are arrived at the inn

Let's alight, gentlemen
Take these gentlemen's
horses, and take care of
them

Now let's see what you'll give us for supper

A capon, half a dozen of pigeons, a sallad, six quails, and a dozen of larks

Will you have nothing else?

That's enough, give us some good wine, and a dessert

Déixem vm^{es} isso por minha Cônta, éu lhes prométo que fiquem bem servidos

Alumía aos senhôres

Dái-nos de ceur o máis depressa que for possível

A'ntes que vmª ténhaõ descalçádo as bótas, estará a céa na mésa

Ténde cuidádo que trágao para címa as nossas

málas e pistólas

Descalçái-me as bótas, e despóis iréis vér se tem dádo algúm féno aos cavállos

Levái-os ao río, e ténde cuidádo que lhes dém algúma avéa

E'u teréi cuidádo de tudo, estéjaő vm^{es} descançádos Senhôres, a céa está prómp-

ta, está na mêsa

Nós vámos já

Vámos ceár, senhôres, para nos hírmos deitár cédo

Sentémo-nos, senhôres, sentémo-nos á mésa

Dái-nos de bebér

A saúde de vm^{ccs} méus senhôres

He bôm o vínho?

Não he máo O capão, não esta be

O capaõ, naõ esta bem assádo

Dái-nos húmas póucas de laránjas, e huma póuca de píménta

Porque não come vmª déstes pômbos?

Eu tênho comído hum pômbo, e três calhândras

Dize ao estalaja déiro que lhe querêmos fallár

Let me alone, I'll please you, I warrant you

Light the gentlemen

Let's have our supper as soon as possible

Before you have pulled your boots off, supper shall be upon the table

Let our portmanteaus and pistols be carried up stairs

Pull off my boots, and then you shall go to see whether they have given the horses any hay

You shall carry them to the river, and take care they give them some oats

give them some oats
I'll take care of everything,
don't trouble yourself

Gentlemen, supper is ready, it is upon the table

We'll come presently
Let's go to supper, gentlemen, that we may go to
bed in good time

Let us sit down, gentlemen, let's sit down at table

Give us some drink

To your health, gentlemen

Is the wine good? It is not bad

The capon is not done enough

Give us some oranges, and a little pepper

Why don't you eat of these pigeons?

I have eaten one pigeon and three larks

Tell the landlord we want to speak with him XIII. Do Saltár e do Corrêr.

HO'RA vámos, quer vm. saltár?

Nao hé bôm saltár lógo despôis de comér

De que módo de saltár gósta vm. máis?

O máis commúm he a pés juntos

Quer vm. que saltémos só com hum pé?

Cômo vm. quizér

Este hé hum sálto muíto grande

Quântos pés saltôu vm.?

Máis de quátro

Apósto que salto por cima daquelle barrânco

Vm. sálta com hum páo comprido

Démos húma carreira

Quér vm. que corrâmos a pé ou a cavállo?

De húma e ôutra sórte

Díga vm. dônde se há de começár, e ônde se há de acabár

Começêmos a corrêr da qui

Correrémos até chegár a ésta árvore

Tênho corrído trêz vêzes désde o lugar assinalado até a árvore

Vm. náõ esperôu pello sinál para principiár a corrér

Aquélle cavállo muito bém

Quantas carreiras tem élle dádo?

Três ou quatro Vm. tem ganhádo XIII. Of Jumping and Running.

COME, will you go to jumping?

It is not good to jump immediately after dinner

What leaping do you like

The most usual is with one foot close to the other Shall we hop with one leg?

As you please This is a very great leap

How many feet have you leap'd?

More than four

I lay I leap clearly over that ditch

You jump with a long stick

Let us run races Shall we run on foot or on horseback? Both ways

Appoint the race

This shall be the starting place

This tree shall be the goal

I have run three times from the starting-place to the tree

You did not stay for the signal to start

That horse has run his race very well

How many heats has he run?

Three or four

You have won the plate

#### CARTAS

DE

#### COMMERCIO.

LETTERS

ON BUSINESS, OR

MERCANTILE AF-FAIRS.

Senhor F. F. 30 de Janeiro Londres. de 1827.

RECEBI' as súas de 3 e 5 do passádo, no dia 5 do corrênte, víndas pelo navío F. F. capitáo B. B. pélas quáes véjo, Vm" preténde carregár as fazendas que recommende ao seu cuidado pela mínha última, no priméiro navío para ésta.

Inclúsas remeto a Vm^e mais algúmas amóstras, porém dezéjo que queira recomendár ao tintureiro, que as côres sejaõ vivas e firmes.

Pelo último navío que daquí partío lhe remetí a cónta de vénda, da súa partída de méias de séda, e das três cáxas de chapeós, pelo navío A; e achándo Vmª algúmas partidas de qualquér déstes dous géneros, que lhe agrádem, as póde mandár, póis sao agóra mui procurádos; déve comtúdo tér múito cuidádo em que séjao da última móda. Ténho veri-

Mr. F. F. The 30th of Jan. London. 1827.

YOURS of the 3rd and 5th of last month, came to hand on the 5th current by the ship F. F. captain B. B.; and therein I take notice, that you intend to put on board the next good ship bound hither, the goods I recommended to your care in my last. Herewith I send you more patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your dyer, that the colours may be lively and durable. By the last ship I remitted you account of sales of the parcel of silk stockings, and the three boxes of hats, by the ship A; and if you meet with a parcel of either, or both, to your mind, please to send them, such articles being now in demand, but great care must be taken of the fashion and make. I have taken care to secure your twenty pipes of oil for the first ships in

ficado o ajúste das 20 pipas azeite da safra proxima, para partirem pelos primeiros navios: igualmente ténho carregádo no navío N. Capitao F. as súas 20 pipas de vínho tínto; assim cômo também as dôze e três quártos de brânco, cuja factúra reméto inclusa: os conhecimentos, lhos remeteréi pelo corréio. Heide estimár chégue túdo a salvamênto. Hé quânto por hóra se me offerêce a dizérlhe; no entretânto sou

> De Vma muito Venerador e Criádo.

the season, and put on board the ship N. capt. F. your twenty pipes of red, and twelve pipes and three hogsheads of white wine, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the bills of lading shall be sent by the post, and I hope will come safe to hand; which being all that is necessary at present, I remain,

Sir, Your humble Servant.

## Senhôr Diôgo Jones.

VOU por ésta avisár a Vm² que pélo navio Derby, lhe remetí duás saquinhas de diamántes, importándo em pagódas 4,396. 25 fan. 10 casks, em retórno dos seus fundos em meu podér; os quáes fiz registrar nos livros da companhia em conformidáde com as suas ordems.

Inclusos achará o conhecimento, factura e a sua conta corrente fecháda, que desejo cheguem a salvamento e me alegrarei de que faça grandes interéces.

Cómo eu estou para voltar para a Európa, á minha chegáda a Lóndres, terei Mr. James Jones.

Sir;

THESE will advise you, that by this ship, the Derby, I have made the return of your stock in my hands, viz. two bulses of diamonds. amounting topagodas 4,396, 25 fan. 10 casks, having registered them according to your order in the company's books; inclosed is a bill of lading, together with invoice, and your account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good As I am returnaccount. ing to Europe, at my arrival in London, I shall have the honour to see you,

a hônra de o vér, e lhe daréi entaő huma relaçaő exacta do commercio da India.

Tenho o gôsto de sêr, De Vm^o reverênte Crd^o e Veneradôr. Forte de S. Jorge. 12 de Jan. 1826. and give you an exact account of the trade in India. I am entirely,

Sir, Your humble Servant. Fort St. George, Jan. 12, 1826.

Lisboa, 4 de Março de 1825.

Sñr. Joao Ferrier, Londres.

ACHO-ME favorecído cóm a súa de 3 do passádo, e véjo, que em execução ás minhas órdems, Vmª tém comprádo os quinhéntos barrís de arenques de fúmo, a 11l. por last. Estou cérto que ésse hé o menór préco por que Vmª os póde obtêr, e nao ténho a menór dúvida que hao de correspondér na sua qualidade.

O meu navio se está a aparelhár pára os ir buscár, e visto élle nao demandár mais de nóve pés d'agua, poderá mésmo carregár no seu cáes (como Vmeteve a bondáde de me dizér) o que poupará quatro pennys por barril, de despésas. Julgo que elle poderá carregár sette centos barris, ou mais. O capitao visto nao ter despézas a fazér, nao necessitará de dinhéiro.

Agradéço-lhe muito a sua informação relativamente

Lisbon, 4 March, 1825. Mr. John Ferrier, London.

Sir,

I AM favoured with yours of the 3rd of last month, and find, in compliance with my order, you have bought the five hundred barrels of red herrings. at 11l. per last. I make no doubt, but that was the lowest price you could get them for, and the goodness of them corresponds. My ship is getting ready with all speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your quay, as she draws no more than nine feet of water (as you are pleased to mention), which will save the charge of fourpence per barrel; I judge she will carry seven hundred barrels, or more. The captain will not have occasion for any money, so will want no supply. I thank you for the information you gave me in relation to the exchange between Lonao cámbio éntre Lóndres e ésta práça, mas cómo júlgo as reméssas sóbre o Exchéquer hum póuco arriscádas, Vmª se servirá sacár sóbre mim ao cámbio mais vantajóso possível, ficándo na certéza, que as suas léttras seráő págas com a ponctualidáde do costúme.

Tênho o gósto de sêr. De Vm^{et} m^{to}. Attênto Ven^{or}. don and this place, but as I look upon the remittance of the money hence as hazardous in Exchequer bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious exchange possible, and your bills at the usual course, which shall meet with all due honour from,

Sir, Your humble servant.

Londres, 18 de Março de 1826.

Sñr. J. Morrice, Cadiz.

TENHO recebido em seu devido tempo as súas differentes cartas, assim como também a minha conta corrente, a qual tenho lançado nos meus lívros em conformidade com Vm.

A súa última hé de 29 do passádo, e nella me mânda o recibo das trés léttras, emportándo em séis mil péças de oito, que mêu irmaō Jozé lhe remetêu por mínha cônta e órdem: espéro fazér triste negócio com éllas depôis de hum desembôlço de tânto témpo, e com hum câmbio taõ desfavorável. Acho que os limites que êlle lhe dêu, fôraõ muito abáxo do cámbio, e preço da práta: porém visto eu ter esperádo London, March 18, 1826.

Mr. J. Morrice, Cadiz.

Sir,

YOUR several letters came to hand in due time. as did my account current, which I have noted in conformity with you; your last to me was of the 29th ult., wherein you give me receipt of the three bills, amounting to six thousand pieces of eight, which my brother Joseph sent to you for my account and by my order; I shall make but a sad bargain of them, after so long a disbursement; besides they cost me a dear exchange; I find his limits to you were much under the price of plate and exchange: now since I have waited all this time, and there being no probability of their

tódo éste témpo, e nao havér probabilidade de hum ou outro baixár,  $Vm^a$  se servirá remetér-me o meu dinhéiro, ao cámbio corrênte, para ésta práça, ou Amsterdam, como lhe parecer máis conveniente aos mêus interésses.

Se o préço do cochenilha, ou da práta descésse tánto, que Vm^e julgasse sér máis conveniente para mim, empregár o meu dinheiro em qualquér déstes dôis géneros, do que remetér-me léttras, nésse cázo o poderá fazér, deichándo eu isso inteiramente á sua disposição, na certéza de que tratará dos méusinteresses, com o mésmo disvélo cômo se fôssem seus próprios.

Estimaría sabér da chegáda do cambóy, porque podería sér produzísse algúma mudánça favorável no commercio, e que cáda hum podésse fazér úso dos séus capitáes; póis ao presente as circumstancias nao convidao a náda. Hé quanto por agóra se me offeréce a dizérlhe. No entretánto ténho o gosto de sér

De Vm^e m^{to} Attênto Ven^{or} e Criádo. falling, be pleased to send my money, as the exchange comes, either for this place or Amsterdam, which you judge will turn most to account. If the plate or cochineal should to a price which you may conceive will answer better than by remittance at a due exchange, in such case invest my money in either of this I shall leave them. entirely to you, being persuaded you will act in my affairs as if they were your own. I should be glad to hear of the fleet's arrival; for, perhaps, it might give some favourable turn to business, so that one could make some use of one's money, for at present it does not invite one to any thing; which is all from.

> Sir, Your humble Servant.

# 336 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

Londres, 3 de Abril de 1826.

Sen" Mills & Co.

Porto.

ESTA serve de informar a Vm^{ce} que de sexta feira a iota dias se hao de abrir os livros do Banco de Inglaterra, para pagar os devidendos vencidos até aquélle dia, em que eu nao deicharei de receber o que lhes pertence dos juros respectivos até a esse tempo, em virtude dos podéres que me conferirao para esse fim, e depois de os ter recebido, lhos remetrei.

Deos guarde a  $Vm^{cs}$   $m^{ts}$  annos.

De  $Vm^{cs}$   $m^{ts}$   $Ven^{s}$  e  $Crd^s$ .

London, 3rd of April, 1826.

Messieurs Mills & Co.

Oporto.

THIS may serve to inform you that the books will be opened at the Bank of England on Friday se'nnight, to pay the dividends due up to this time to the parties concerned, when I shall be ready to receive whatever belongs to you both, with the respective interests thereon, by virtue of your powers given to me for that purpose, and on receipt thereof, shall remit the same to you, whom God preserve many years.

Your most humble Servant.

Hum Escrito, ou Bilhête aberto, a hum Amigo ou Vezinho, em qualquer ocasiaõ.

AO Senr. G. S. que seu creado T. M. lhe róga o favór, de lhe enviar pelo portadór

de que agora precisa, e por que lhe ficará muito obrigado. A short open Note or Message, to a friend or neighbour, for any thing. upon occasion.

TO Mr. G. S. that his most humble servant, T. M. desires the favour of him to send by the bearer

having immediate occasion for it, and by which he will greatly oblige him.

Carta, ou Instrumênto de Procuração.

SAIBAM tódos quántos éste instruménto, ou carta de procuração virem, que eu, A. B., de Londres, hómem de negócio, ténho nomeádo e constituído e por esta presente noméo, ordéno, constituo e faço o senhor B. C. de

negociante, méo verdadéiro e legítimo procuradór, por mim e em meu nóme e ao meu uso, póde demandár, arecadár, e reçebér de T. B. negociante a sóma de

a mim devída pelo ditto T. B. dándo e por esta concedêndo ao meu ditto procuradór o meu podér plenario e autoridáde de exercitár, e de usar de todas e taes accoes e butras cousas em direito necessárias, para a cobránça da ditta dívida, e em meu nôme, de dar, e fazer quitações ou outras descárgas, e geralmente de fazer e executar na materia sobreditta tao plenáriaménte como se eu mésmo fizesse ou pudesse fazér, estando pessoalmente presente; ratificándo, confirmándo, e outórgando toda e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu procuradôrlegitimaménte fizér ou causar de se fazer nélla por esta presente. Em testemúnha do que assinei e

. A Letter of Attorney.

KNOW all men by these presents, that I, A. B., of London, merchant, have named and constituted, and by these presents do name, ordain, appoint, and make my trusty friend, B. C. of merchant,

my true and lawful attorney, for me, and in my name, and to my use, to demand, sue for, recover, and receive of T. B. of

merchant, the sum of to me due and owing by and from the said T. B. giving, and hereby granting unto my said attorney, my full power and authority to use and exercise all such acts, things, and devices in the law, as shall be necessary for the recovering of the said debt, and give acquittance, or other discharges, in my name; to make and give, and generally to do and execute on the premises, as fully as myself might or could do, were I personally present; ratifying, confirming and allowing all and whatsoever my said attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein, by these presents. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and

## 338 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

sellei ésta em aos 20 dias do méz de Março de 1826.

Por A. B.

Assinado e sellado diánte de

 $\left. \begin{array}{c} T. A. \\ M. B. \end{array} \right\}$  Testemunhas.

seal, the 20th of March, 1826. A.B. Sealed and delivered in the Presence of T.A.

M. B.

Carta, ou o Instrumênto de Fretamênto.

ESTA carta, ou instrumento de fretamento contratádo, feito aos días do mez de do anno de do nacimento de nosso Senhor Jesús Christo, &c. Entre T. B. mestre, debaixo de

Deos, do navío nomeádo, de dozéntas e cincoénta toneládas que ao presenle está surto e ancorádo no rio de húma párte, e E. T. M. B. L. &c. homens de negócio da butra parte: Certificao que o ditto méstre tem dádo em aluguél e fretádo o ditto navío aos dittos hómens de negócio e que elles os dittos homens de negócio têm tomádo em aluguél pélla viágem aos concértos e ás condições, a saber: o dilto méstre faz concérto, promete e otórga, por élle mêsmo, seus testamentéiros, e administradôres, e com os dittos homens de negócio, e qualquer délles, ou séus, e a qualquer dos seus testamenThe Copy of a Charter-Party of Affreightment.

THIS charter party of Affreightment, indented, made the of the month of anno domini, between T. A. master, under God, of the good ship or vessel, called the of the burthen of tons, or thereabouts, now riding at anchor, in the river of the one part, and E, T, M, B, L, &c. merchants, of the other part, witnesseth, that the said master has granted and let the said ship to freight unto the said merchants, and that they the said merchantshave accordingly hired her for the voyage, and upon the terms and conditions following: that is to say, the said master doth covenant, promise, and grant for himself, his executors, and administrators, to and with the said merchants, and either of them, their and either of their executors, administrators, and assigns, by these

téiros, administradores, e constituintes, por estes presentes; que o ditto navío forte e sao de quilha, e bem provido de mantimêntos. enxárcias e génte, e aparelhádo de tôdas as côusas conveniêntes e necessárias para fazér a viagem adiante declaráda; com o priméiro vento favorável e bóm tempo que Deos permittir despôis da dáta da presente, patirá do pôrto de com tôdas as táes fazêndas e mercadorías que as dittos homens de negócio ou os seus constituíntes, entrementes carregaráő ou meteráő abórdo délle e com élle em direitúra dará á véla e aplicará ao como o vênto e

como o vento e o têmpo máis favorecérem ao ditto navío na súa viágem; e em chegándo tao pérto do ditto lugár de

elle o ditto méstre ou os seus constituíntes déntro de dias de trabálho para se contárem lógo despois de tal sua chegáda, nao sómente descaregaraõ, entregaraõ as dittas fazéndas e mercadorías metidas abórdo do ditto navío sóbre ditto, aos dittos homens de negócio, aos seus feitôres ou constituíntes, ou a algúns ou algúm délles a salvamento e bém acondicionádas, salvo o risco dos máres, e o tolhimênto de principes e goverpresents; that the said ship, strong and sound, and well and sufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and apparelled, with all things fit, needful and necessary, for the performance of the voyage, hereafter mentioned, shall, with the first fair wind and weather, which God shall send, after the date of these presents, depart from the port of with all such

goods and merchandize as the said merchants, or their assigns, shall in the mean time lade and put on board of her, and therewith directly sail, and apply unto as wind and

weather shall best serve for the said ship to sail, and being arrived as near to the said place of

he the said master, or assigns shall and will, within working days

next from and after such her arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the said goods and merchandize put on board the said ship at

aforesaid, unto the said merchants, their factors, or assigns, or some or one of them, in safety, and well conditioned, the dangers of the seas, and restraint of princes and rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, relade, and take on board the said ship, of and

nadóres, mas também receberáő, tornaráő a carregár, e tomaráõ abórdo do ditto navío, de e dos dittos hómens de negócio, dos seus feitôres ou constituíntes, ou de algúns ou algúm délles, tôdas as táes fazéndas e mercadorías que élles ou qualquer délles ali caregaráő, ou meteraő abórdo délle até o comprimênto intéiro da cárga do ditto navío; a sabér: tánto quánto bém se podér arrumár debáixo da cubérta no convés, e adiante do mastro gránde, salvo o lugar para os mantímentos, enxárcias e aparélhos do ditto navío, e os dittos dias de trabálho sendo acabádos, ou o ditto navío séndo ali mais depréssa despachádo, o que priméiro succedér, elle o ditto méstre ou os seus constituintes com a priméira bôa occasião de témpo e vénto favorável em dereitura navegaráő e tornaráő a vir côm o ditto navío e a sua cárga, do ditto pôrto de descaregar, e recaregar de aqui dêntro de

diás de trabálho lógo despôis da entráda do ditto navío dáda na alfándega desta ditta élle o ditto méstre ou os séus constituíntes descaregaráo e entregaráo as dittas fazéndas e mercadórias carregádas abórdo do ditto na-

from the said merchants, their factors, or assigns, or some or one of them, all such goods and merchandize, as they or any of them shall there please to lade and put on board her, to the said ship's full and complete lading; that is to say, as much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole hole, and between decks, afore the main mast, room only reserved for the said ship's provisions, tackle, and apparel, and the said working days

being expired, or the said ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said master, or his assigns, shall and will, with the then next opportunity of wind and weather from her said unlading and relading port of said, directly sail, return, and come back with the said ship and lading unto the port of here within working days next after the said ship shall be entered in the custom-house of this said he the said mas-

ne the said master, or his assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said goods and merchandizes, laden on board the said ship at her lading and relading aforesaid, unto the said merchants, their executors, administrators, or assigns, in safety,

vio ao séu descarregár e recarregár ditto, aos dittos hómens de negócio, e os seus testamentéiros, administradôres, ou constituíntes, a salvamento, salvo o risco dos máres e o tolhiménto de principes e governadôres, e assim se acabará a ditta destináda viágem e os dittos hómens de negócio concértam, prométem, e otórgam por élles mésmos e qualquér délles, ou séus, e qualquér de séus testamentéiros, administradôres, e constituíntes por esta preos séus tessente: que tamentēiros. administradôres, feitôres ou constituíntes nao sóménts descarregaráő e recarregaráő o ditto navío ao seu pôrto, de descarregár, e recarregar de sobre ditto,

e despacharáő e descarregaráő o mésmo néste

na manéira e fórma acíma declaráda: e déntro dos cértos dias e têmpos sôbre nomeádos; mas também por intéiro fréte tôdo o se vencêr, para se pagar pedír por e durante ésta presente destinada viagem; bém e verdadeiraménte pagaráő ou causaráő que se págue ao ditto méstre, aos séus testamentéiros, administradôres ou constituintes a somma de de dinhéiro cor-

and well conditioned, the dangers of the seas, and restraint of princes and rulers, excepted, and so end the said intended voyage; and the said merchants do covenant, promise, and grant, for themselves, and either of them, their, and either of their executors and administrators, to and with the said master, his executors and administrators, and assigns, by these presents, that executors, administrators, factors, or assigns, shall and will not only unlade and relade the said ship, at her unlading and relading aforesaid, and dispatch, and discharge the same at this in the manner and form as

in the manner and form as above expressed, and within the respective days and times above mentioned, but also shall and will, in full of all freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this present intended voyage, well and duly pay, or cause to be paid, unto the said master, his executors, administrators, or assigns

the sum of
of lawful money of
in the manner and form
following: that is to say,
part thereof
within days after
the said ship shall be en-

custom-

tered into the

rente de na manéira e fórma seguinte ; a sabér : párte

délle déntro em
diás despóis da entráda do
ditto navío dáda na alfándega de Item
máis . . . . . déntro em

dias proximos seguintes, e o restánte do ditto fréte intéiro déntro em

dias lógo despôis da descárga do ditto navío aquí em sobre ditto, E acórdase reciprocamente por e entre ámbas as pártes por élles mésmos, os seus particuláres testamenteiros, e administradóres que tódos os gástos dos pórtos que se vencérem para pagárse ou pedirse, durânte esta presente destináda

viágem; seráő págos e satisféitos na manéira e

forma seguinte : a sabér

délles, péllos dittos hómens de negôcio ou sêus testamentéiros ou constituintes: Além disso, por, ésta se concérta que poderá sêr e sêja lícito aos, e péllos dittos hómens de negocio, os seus feitôres, ou constituíntes de retér o dítto navío em detênça ao seu pôrto, descarga e recárga sobre ditta, e tambem em . . . sobre ditto, tanto têmpo e tántos dias que se requeirão, além dos dias cértos acima apontádos, sálvo que não pássem

dica por intéiro ; elles

house of Item more thereof

within days then next following, and the remaining part of the said whole freight within

days next after the said ship shall be delivered after

lading here at aforesaid; and it is mutually agreed by and between the said parties to these presents, for themselves, their several executors and administrators, that all port charges which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this present intended voyage, shall be paid and satisfied in the manner and form following; that is to thereof by say, the said merchants, their executors, factors, or as-

signs, and the other thereof by the said master, his executors or assigns: further, it is hereby agreed, that it shall and may be lawful unto and for the said merchants, their factors, or assigns, to keep the said ship in demurrage at her unlading and relading port above mentioned, and also aforesaid, over and above the respected days aforementioned, such other time and number of days as will be requisite, so as the same exceed not

days in the whole, they the said merchants, their factors, for each and every

os dittos hómens de negócio, os seus feitôres, constituíntes por cáda húm e cáda tál dia pagándo ao ditto méstre ou aos séus constituíntes de dia em dia, cômo mésmo se vencér para se pagár, qualquér cousa sobredítta em contrario não obstante: e péllo comprimênto de tôdas, e de cáda, huma das côusas acima declarádas, as quáes por párte e péllo que tóca ao ditto méstre, aos séus testamentéiros, administradôres ou constituintes e cada húm délles s'aő e dévem de ser avídus, tídas, observádas e compridas, o ditto méstre se obriga a si mésmo, os seus testamentéiros, e administradôres, juntamente com o ditto navío, o seu fréte, enxárcias e aparéthos aos dittos hómens de negócio, aos séus testamentéiros, administradóres e constituíntes, e cáda húm délles na sôma ou péna de

dinhéiro corrente de pára se pagár bém e verdadeirámente por esta presente, e também péllo comprimento de tódas e de cáda húma das cóusas sobre dittas, os quáes por párte e péllo que tóca aos dittos hómens de negócio, aos séus testamentéiros administradores, constituintes ou qualquér délles, são e dévem de sér guardádas, págas, e compridas; os dittos hómens de se dittos sobre des se dittos sobre de se dittos sobre de se devem de se guardádas, págas, e compridas; os dittos hómens de se de se dittos sobre de se dittos sobre de se de se dittos sobre de se dittos sobre de se de s

such day, paying unto the said master, or his assigns

day by day, where the same shall grow due and payable, any thing aforesaid to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the performance of all and singular the premises, which on the part and behalf of the said master, his executors, administrators, and assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and performed, the said master doth bind and oblige himself, his executors, and administrators, together with the said ship and her freight, tackle and apparel unto the said merchants. their executors, administrators, and assigns, and every of them, in the sum or penalty of pounds of lawful money of

well and truly to be paid by these presents, and likewise for the performance of all and singular the premises, which on the part and behalf of the said merchants, their executors, administrators, and assigns, or any of them, are and ought to be kept, paid and performed, the said merchants do bind and oblige themselves, their executors, and administrators, jointly and severally, together with their goods, to be laden on board the said

mens de negócio sé obrigao a si mésmos, os seus testamenteiros, e administradôres, júnta e separádamente com a suas fazendas que se caregarao abordo do ditto navío nésta presénte destináda viágem, ao ditto méstre aos séus testamentéiros, administradôres e constituíntes, e a cáda húm délles, na semelhante sôma da pêna de de semelhante dinheiro corrente de para sêr pago bém e verdadeiramênte por ésta presente; em testemunha do que as pártes sobredittas assínáraő e setáraő reciprocamente éstas de presentes cartas fretamênto contratádas, ao día e ánno priméiro acíma declarádo.

T. B.

Selládo e entregue diante de A. B. C. D.

Apóliçe de Segúro.

EM o Nôme de Deos, Amen, tánto no seu próprio nôme, cómo, por, ou em o nôme, ou nômes de tôdos e cada pessôa ou pessôas a quem o mésmo pertencér, pôssa ou poderá pertencér, em párte ou em tôdo, faz o seguro, causa asi mésmo e a élles, e a cada húm délles, de assegurárse, pership, this present intended voyage, unto the said master, his executors, administrators, and assigns, and every of them, in the like sum and penalty of

of like lawful money of also well and truly to be paid by these presents. In witness whereof, the parties aforesaid to these present charter-parties indented, have interchangeably put their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

T. B. Sealed and delivered in the presence of A. B.

C. D.

A Policy of Assurance.

IN the Name of God, Amen, as well in his own name, as for and in the name and names of all and every other person and persons to whom the same doth, may, or shall appertain, in part, or in all, doth make assurance, and cause himself and them, and every of them, to be insured, lost, or not lost

didosou na perdídos sobre qualquér género de fazendas e mercadorías quaesquér, carregádas, ou para se carregárem, abordo do bóm navío por nome

do porte de tonelúdas, de que hé méstre debáixo de Déos P. M. ou quém quér que for por méstre do ditto navio, ou o méstre, délle se nomée ou nomeará; principiándo a aventúra sóbre as dittas fazéndas e mercadorías de, e logo despôis de carregállas abórdo do ditto navío

e assím se continuará
e ficará até que o ditto
navío cóm as dittas fazéndas e mercadorías quáesquér chegar e as
mésmas ahí descarregádas
em salvaménto; e será
lícito parao ditto navío,
nesta viágem, de parár e
detérse em quáesquér pórtos, ou lugáres sém
prejuízo a éste Segúro. As
dittas fazéndas e mercadorías por concérto, saő, e seráő avalíadas em

Sém que se de outra conta déllas mésmas, tocánte as aventúras e ríscos com que nós os seguradóres nos contentamos e que tomámos sóbre nós nésta viágem; ellas sáō dos máres, das náos de guérra, de fógo, inimígos, corsarios, ladrões, roubadóres, alijaméntos ou fazéndas perdídas e deitádas no már, lettras de

upon any kind
of goods and merchandize
whatsoever, laden or to be
laden aboard the good ship
called the burthen
tons, or there-

abouts; whereof P. M. is master, under God, for this present voyage

or whosoever else shall go for master in the said ship, or by whatsoever name or names the said ship, or the master thereof, is or shall be named or called: beginning the adventure upon the said goods and merchandise from and immediately following the lading thereof aboard the said ship and so shall continue and endure until the said ship, with the said goods and merchandise whatsoever shall be arrived and the same there safely landed; and it shall be lawful for the said ship in this voyage to stop and stay at any port or places

without prejudice to this assurance. The said goods and merchandise by agreement, are and shall be valued at without further account to be given for the same, touching the adventures and perils which we the assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this voyage; they are of the seas, menof-war, fire, enemies,

marca, e contra marca, sobresáltos, tomadías no már, citaçõés, tolhimentos e detênças de tôdos os rêys, príncipes e póvos de nação, condição ou qualidáde qualquér, barratría e contrástes enganósos do méstre e dos marinhéiros, e de tôdos os ôutros perígos; pérdas e desástres que ja viéraő ou que viráõ ou prejuízo, desaproveitamento ou dáno das dittas fazéndas e mercadorías, ou de alguã párte déllas. E se acáso succedér algúma pérda ou desventúra, será lícito aos asseguradôres, feitôres, sérvos e constituíntes de mandár fazér diligéncias e trabalhár por, em, e ácérca da defêza, salvamênto, e recobramento das dittas fazéndas e mercadorías, ou de algúma párte déllas sêm prejuízo déste seguro, aos gástos do que nos os asseguradôres contribuirémos cada hum confórme a sua quantía nélle asseguráda ; e nós os asseguradôres estámos de acórdo e concêrto que ésta escritúra e segúro terá tánta fórça e valor como a mais authéntica apolice ou escritúra de seguro dantes feita em qualquér parte de

E assim nós os asseguradôres sómos conténtes e por esta prometêmos e nos obrigêmos cada húm por súa própria

thieves, pirates, rovers, jetsons, letters of marque and counter-marque, surprisals, takings of sea, arrests, restraints, and detainments of all kings, princes, and people of what nation, conditions, or quality soever, baratry of the master and mariners, and of all other perils, losses, and misfortunes, that have or shall come to the hurt, detriment, or damage of the said goods and merchandise, or any part thereof; and in case of any loss or misfortune, it shall be lawful to the assured factors, servants, and assigns, to sue, labour, and travel, for, in, and about the defence, safeguard, and recovery of the said goods and merchandise, or any part thereof, without prejudice to this assurance, to the charges wherof we the assurers will contribute each one according to the rate and quantity of his sum herein assured. And it is agreed by us the insurers, that this writing and assurance shall be of as much force and effect, as the surest policy or writing of assurance heretofore made or elsewhere in And so we the assurers are contented, and do hereby promise and bind ourselves, each one for his own part, our heirs, execupárte, os nóssos herdeiros, testamentéiros, administradóres e constituíntes pello verdadéiro comprimento das cóusas acima declarádas, confessándo que estámos págos e satisféitos do que se nos déve ácônta deste segúro.

Em testemúnha do que nós os seguradóres, assinámos ao pé déste, com as quantías assegurádas, &c.

Eu A. B. sou contênte com esté segúro por cém livras Esterl. L. em de £. 100. tors, and assigns, to the assured, their executors, administrators, and assigns, for the true performance of the premises, confessing ourselves paid the consideration due unto us for this assurance, by

In witness whereof, we the assurers have subscribed our names and sums assured

in

I A. B. am contented with this assurance for one hundred pounds. Witness my hand the 15th of March, 1826.  $\mathcal{L}.100$ 

#### Conhecimento.

DIGO eu T. B. de

méstre ou capitáő que sou do navío que Déos salve por nome que ao presente está surto e ancorádo no porto de para com o favor de Déos seguir a sua viágem ao porto de aonde hé minha direita descárga, que hé verdade, que recebí, e ténho carregado dentro do ditto navío debáixo de cuberta enxúta e bém acondicionada de

marcado comamarca de fóra, o qual me obrígo o prométo, levándome Déos a bóm salvamento e ditto navío ao ditto pórto, de entregár em nôme do sobreditto a T. M,

#### A Bill of Lading.

SHIPPED, by the grace of God, in good order, and well-conditioned, by

in and upon the

good ship called the

whereof is master under God for this present voyage and now riding at anchor in

and by God's grace bound for to say

being marked and numbered as in the margin, and are to be delivered in like good order, and well-conditioned, at the aforesaid port of the danger of the seas only excepted, unto Mr.

or his assigns, he or they paying for the said goods with primage

# 348 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

auzênte a quêm sêus poderes tivér pagándome de fréte para assim comprir e guardár, obrigo minha pessóa, e béms e ditto navío; em certésa do qual dei tres conhecimentos de hum theór, assinádos por mim ou por meu escriváő; hum comprido os outros naő válhaő; feito em 14 de Março de 1826 Annos.

Ignóro o conteúdo.

Instrumento ou Escritura de Compromisso.

A TÔDOS quântos éste presente Instrumento ou escritúra de compromísso vírem, de nós acredóres de G. M. negociante de

saúde; Cômo o ditto G. M. ao presente fica devendo e em dereito déve a nós os acredôres delle ditto G. M. várias e divérsas sômmas de dinhêiro, &c. As quáes em rasao de muitas dívidas e algúmas déllas mui grandes, que também em diréito se lhe dévem a élle, nao se podem arrecadár sem algúma dilação de têmpo, e por sêrem algúmas déllas irrecuperáveis sem demânda, elle está por ora muito desabilitado de fazér pagaand average, as is accustomed. In witness whereof, the master and purser of the said ship has affirmed to three bills of lading, all of this tenor and date; the one of which three bills being accomplished, the other two to stand void. And so God send the good ship to her desired port in safety. Amen. Dated in the 14th of March

1826.

Inside and contents unknown.

A Letter of Licence.

TO all people, to whom this present writing shall come, we the creditors of G. M. of

merchant, send greeting. Whereas the said G. M. at this present time, doth stand indebted, and doth justly owe unto us the said creditors of him the said G. M. divers and sundry sums of money, &c. which, by reason of many debts, and some of them very great, that are likewise justly owing unto him, and cannot be had or recovered without some respite of time, and some of them not without suit, he is very much disabled at present to make payment unto us

ménto a nós os seus acredôres da nóssa intéira e jústa dívida confórme a

sua vontáde e deséjo; a respeito de que, elle nos péde com tódo o encarecimento que nós os dittos acredóres, e cada hum de nós fóssemos servídos de dár e concedér a élle o ditto G. M. aos seus testamentéiros, administradóres, ou constituíntes, tánta larguésa ou dilação de témpo péllo pagamento e satisfação de nóssas dívidas particuláres, que lhe.

parecér jústo, e rasáő péllo alcánce e cobránça das dittas dividas: Asabér, que nos e cáda hum de nos

ficássemos contêntes a tomár e receber de nossas dívidas intéiras em

para se repartirem em

pártes, pára se pagárem em pagaméntos divérsos na manéira e fórma seguínte: Asabér, o primeíro pagaménto délla há de ser e o resto pagár-se-há em proximo pága e satisfação

téira pága e satisfação das dittas dívidas especeficádas; E péllo máis plenário comprimento dos vários pagamentos sobredittos em tál manéira e fórma cómo acima se limita e declára; ao verdadéiro intento destas presentes elle o ditto G. M. ao ou ántes do será obrigádo a nós os díttos acré-

the said creditors, of our whole and just debt, as he seems willing and desirous; in consideration whereof, he desires us, that we the said creditors, and every one of us, would be pleased to give and grant unto the said G. M. his executors, administrators, or assigns, such liberty or respite of time, for the payment and satisfaction of our several debts, as he thinks reasonable for the obtaining, getting, and recovering of the said debts: viz. That we and every one of us would be content to take, and accept of our whole debts in

to be divided in parts, to be paid several pay-

ments, in manner and form following: viz. The first payment thereof to be and the residue to be

paid at next in full payment and satisfaction of the said several debts: and for the more full performance of the said several payments aforesaid, in such manner and form as is above limited and declared, according to the true meaning of these presents, he the said G. M. shall and will, at, or before become bound unto us the said creditors respectively, by one obligation in due form of law to be made, including all and

dóres na mésma conformidáde, por húma obrigação que se fará na melhor fórma de deréito com tódos e cada hum dos pagaméntos, na manéira acima limitáda, em hum cérto lugár ou lugáres conveni-Entes de nos os dittos acredôres nomeádos, e a pêna de cada húma das obrigações há de ser dobráda da somma intéira, inclusa nella mésma, para sér a nós entrégue e a cáda hum de nós, os nossos testamentéiros, ou constituíntes, ao ou ántes do proximo seguinte da data désta; por esta cáusa sáibase; que nós os díttos acredóres agui a baixo assinádos, e cada húm de nós para si em particulár, e por séus testamentéiros, administradôres e constituíntes ao respêito do emcima especificádo e declarádo, por êstes presentes, de vontade propria, consentímos, contratámos, prometêmos e concordámos, ao e com o ditto G. M. ou séus testamentéiros, administradôres e constituíntes por éstes presêntes que nos os dittos acredôres, e cada hum de nós, os nóssos testamentéiros, administradôres e constituíntes, aceitarémos do ditto G. M. dos séus testamentéiros, administradóres e constituintes, todas e cada huma de táes dívidas

every one of the payments in such sort as is above limited at some convenient place or places by each of us the said creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the penalty of every obligation to be doubled the whole sum included in the condition of the same to be delivered unto us, and every one of us, our executors or assigns, at or before the

next ensuing the date hereof: Know ye, therefore, that we the said creditors, whose names are here under-written, and every one of us for his own part, and for his executors, administrators, and assigns, for the consideration above specified and expressed, do by these presents willingly consent, covenant, promise, agree to and with the said G. M. his executors, administrators, and assigns, to accept of the said G. M. his executors, and assigns, all and every of the said debts and sums of money by the said G. M. unto us, and every one of us, owing, and paying upon such obligations, assurance and assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such manner and sort, and at such days and times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said creditors,

and every of us, our, and

e quantias de dinhéiro do ditto G. M. a nós e cada hum de nós, devídas e vencídas em virtude de táes obrigaçõens, seguránça ou seguránças sobredittas, para se pagárem em tál modo e manéira, e aos táes dias e têmpos que acima se limitao e requérem. E além disso, que nós os dittos acredôres e cada hum de nós, ou nóssos e cada húm de nóssos testamentéiros, administradôres e constituintes, em conformidade a entrega da ditta obrigação a nós e a cada húm de nóssos testamentéiros, administradores, e constituíntes, sellarémos, assinarémos, e na melhór fórma e direito entregarémos ao ditto G. M. a nóssa gerál e sufficiente descarga, para sér rendída por élle o ditto G. M. ou séus testamentéiros, administradôres, e constituíntes, á data e á limitação, antes do dia e data desta obrigação nóva; em testemúnha do que témos assinádo e selládo esta.

> Datáda aos 15 de Maio de 1826.

every of our executors, administrators, and assigns, respectively, upon the delivery of the said obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our executors, administrators, and assigns, shall and will, at the charge of the said G. M. his executors, administrators, and assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due form of law, deliver to the said G. M. our sufficient general release, for him, his executors, administrators, or assigns, to bear date and limitation. before the day of the date of this new obligation to be made for the debt. In witness whereof, we have hereunto set our hands and seals.

Dated the 15th of May 1826, &c.

#### Lêtras de Cambio.

Bills of Exchange.

Londres, por 300 Milreis. 5 de Junho, 1826.

London, for 300 Milreas. 5th of June, 1826.

 $A'\ VISTA\ desta\ minha$ priméira létra de cambio. pagará Vm. ao senhor T. M. ou ordem a somma de trezentos Milreis em dinhéiro corrênte de Portugál, valôr recebido do senhor T. D. como por aviso de Seu Venerador e Creádo.

Ao Senhor T. M. Negociante em Lisboa.

T. M.

AT sight of this my first bill of exchange, please to pay to Mr. T. M. or order, the sum of three hundred Milreas in current money of Portugal, value received of Mr. T. D. placing it to account, as per advice from, Sir,

Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. M. Merchant in Lisbon.

Lisbou, 2501. Esterl. 7 de Junho, 1826.

A QUARENTA dias vista désta minha segunda letra de cambio (a primeira naő sendo pága) pagará Vm. ao Senhor F. G. & Companhia, ou ordem a somma de dozêntas e cinquenta livras esterlinas em moéda corrente de Inglaterra, valór recebido do Senhor J. D. como por aviso

Seu Venerador e Creádo. H. S.

Ao Senhor T. B. Negociante em Londres.

Lisbon. for 250l. Sterling. 7th of June, 1826.

AT Forty days sight of this my second bill of exchange, my first and third not being paid, please to pay to Mr. F. G. and Company, or order, the sum of two hundred and fifty pounds sterling, in current money of England, value received of Mr. J. D. and place it to account, as per advice, from Sir,

Yours, H. S.

To Mr. T. B. Merchant in London. F. P. Protesto de huma Letra de Cambio.

SAIBAM todos a quêm ésta presente escritura tocár que aos mêz de, do anno de a requerimento de P. C. negociante de M. N. tabaliao de nótas jurádo e admitído pélla autoridade del Rei, &c. fúi á cása da moráda do senhor T. B. sóbre quém a letra de cambio acima referida hé sacáda, e mostréi a originál ao ditto T. B. requeréndo a sua aceitação della: o qual me respondéo que nao aceitaría a ditta létra por humas rasôens que escreve $ria\ ao\ senhor\ T.\ P.\ sacad\^{o}r$ ; pella quat rasaõ eu o ditto tabaliaŭ protestei, por este presente protésto, tánto contra o ditto F.P. o sacador cômo também côntra o ditto T. B. sôbre quem hé sacáda, demáis côntra todas as outras pessôas, endossadôres, ou outras nélla interessádas, por tôdos os cámbios, recámbios, dános e interésses quáesquér: em presénça de H. J. S. T. chamados por testemúnhas a éste presente acto, feito no meu escritório em o dia e ánno acima declarado.

M. N. Notario Publico.

A Protest of a Bill of Exchange.

KNOW all persons whom this present writing may concern, that the in the year the request of Mr. P. C. of merchant, I, M. N. public notary, sworn and admitted by authority of his most sacred majesty, did go to the dwelling-house or habitation of Mr. T. B. upon whom the abovenamed bill of exchange is drawn, and showed the original unto the said Mr. T. B. demanding his acceptance of the same, who answered me he should not accept the same bill, for some reasons he should write Mr. F. P. the drawer; wherefore I the said notary did protest, and by these presents protest, as well against the said F. P. the drawer, as likewise against the said T. B. upon whom it is drawn; as also against all other persons, indorsers, or others therein concerned, for all changes, rechanges, damages and interest whatsoever, in presence of H. J. and S. T. called for witnesses to this present act, done in my office in the day and year above mentioned. M. N. Notary Public.

Formas de Recibos.

Dinheíro recebido por inteiro.

Recebi do senhor Thomas Crew, seis livras sete shilins seis pennys, resto de todas as contas, com o ditto. A. B.

1 de Janeiro.

Dinheiro recebido por Conta de meu Amo.

Recebi do Sr. Jonas Lee, quatro livras e cinco shilins por conta de meu amo Moises Trust.

C. D

22 de Fevereiro 1826.

Dinheiro recebido á cônta.

Recebi, a 30 de Março, 1826, do Sr. Jacinto Cook, oinco livras cinco shilins, á cônta de doze livras e dez shilins, por conta de meu pai Antonio Truelove.

E. F.

30 de Março 1826.

Dinheiro recebido á cônta de Contas que nao estao ajustádas.

Recebi da senhora Martha Rich, por maos de Pedro Cornet, onze livras á conta. G. H.

24 de Abril 1826.

Forms of Receipts.

Money received in Full.

RECEIVED, 1st January 1826, of Mr. Thomas Crew, six pounds seven shillings and sixpence, in full of all demands, per

A. B.

For another's Use.

RECEIVED, 22nd February, 1826, of Mr. Jonas Lee, four pounds five shillings, for the use of my master Moses Trust, per

C. D.

Money received in Part.

RECEIVED, 30th of March, 1826, of Mr. James Cook, five pounds ten shillings, in part of twelve pounds ten shillings, for my father, Anthony Truelove, per E. F.

___

Money received on Accounts unsettled.

RECEIVED, 24th April, 1826, of Mrs. Martha Rich, by the hands of Peter Cornet, eleven pounds on account. G. H.

Quando hum Rol ou Conta se paga por inteiro.

Recebi, a 15 de Mayo, 1826, o empórte d'esta conta.

I. K.

When a Bill is paid in Full.

RECEIVED, 15th May, 1826, the full contents here-of.

I.K.

Quando se paga dinheiro a Conta de hum ról.

Recebi sete livras á conta deste rol.

L. M.

6 de Junho de 1826.

When a Bill is paid in Part.

RECEIVED, 26th June, 1826, seven pounds in part hereof.

L. M.

Notas ou Obrigaçoens que faz hum Homem quando toma dinheiro imprestado.

Londres, 4 de Junho, 1826.

Eu abaixo firmado prométo, pagar ao Sr. É. D. banqueiro do lhesouro de sua Majestade, do Excise, ou á sua órdem, quarenta dias despôis da dáta désta obrigação quátro centas etrinta livras por vaiór recebido.

Christovaõ Wade.

£. 430

Promissory Notes for a Man's Self.

London, June 4th, 1826. I PROMISE to pay to Mr. Edward Draper, cashier of his majesty's revenue of Excise, or order, forty days after date, four hundred and thirty pounds, value received

Christopher Wade. £. 430

Eu abaixo firmado prométo pagar ao Sr. Paulo Barker ou á sua órdem em sendo requerido, trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous shilins e seis pennys por valór recebido hoje 17 de Julho, 1826.

Philip Venham. £. 394 2 6 I PROMISE to pay to Paul Barker, esq. or order, on demand, three hundred and ninety-four pounds, two shillings, and six-pence, value received this 17th of July, 1826.

Philip Venham. £.394 2 6

#### 356 COMMERCIAL LETTERS, &c.

E U abaixo firmado prométo pagar ao Sr. J. T. ou
á sua órdem, quarénta e
nóve livras, e tres shilins 6
mezes despóis da dáta desta
obrigação, por valor recebído emverdáde do que asignei esta 24 de Agosto 1826.
W. J.

£. 49 3 0.

[N. B. Obsérvese que em nótas ou obrigaçõens sémpre se declára a sóma recebída sem a qual naõ saõ de nenhuma força nem tem authoridade.] I PROMISE to pay to Mr. J. T. or order, forty-nine pounds three shillings, six months after date, value received. Witness my hand this 24th of August, 1826.

£.49 3 0.

[N.B. Observe in promissory notes that the words "Value received" must be inserted, or they are of no force.]

# PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR.

## PART IV.

CONTAINING

SEVERAL USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING PASSAGES,

COLLECTED FROM THE BEST PORTUGUESE WRITERS.

ntre os bons ditos de Souzéni, poéta Persiâno, se cônta, que bebêndo com outro poéta, seu amígo, certo licor, se queixáva, de que éra muito quente e dizêndolhe, Amígo, "pobre de ti que daqui a poucos días te farão bebêr no inférno agoas sulfúreas, e ardêntes, que te abrazarão as entrânhas"—"Não impórta," replicôu Souzéni; "bastará que me lêmbre algum dos teus versos, que ellas se farão mais frias, que neve."

Catharina Parthenay, sobrínha da célebre Anna Parthenay, dêu esta bella respósta a Henríque IV. "Saíba vossa mag^{de} que êu sôu muito pobre para ser "sua consórte; e que no mesmo tempo descêndo de "huma família muito illústre, para ser sua dama."

Huma Princêza Cathólica, e de rara virtúde, vêndo reduzído o Marechal de Saxonia ás agoniás da mórte, disse, que éra para sentír o nao se podêr rezár hum *De profundis* pella alma de hum que tínha feíto cantár tantos *Te Deum*.

A Dom Christóvao de Moura, Marquêz de Castéllo Rodrigo, e Vice-Rey de Portugál por Dom Philipe Tercéiro, índo por huma sala do Páço de Lisbôa, hum soldádo honrádo, que tínha bem servído na India, lhe dáva hum memoriál, e pedía, que se lembrásse dos seus papéis, porque havía largo têmpo, que andáva pretendêndo. Respondêo-lhe o Marquêz, que havía muíta Gente para despachár, e nao se podiáo despachár todos com brevidáde; o soldádo adiantândo o passo se atravessôu diânte sem descomposição, e fazêndo parár o Vice-Rey lhe dísse com grande confiânça; "Senhôr Dom Christóvao despáche Vs. os hómens, e deixe a Gente." O Marquêz aceitôu o memoriál, e o despachôu no mesmo dia.

Mandândo hum Fidálgo em Lisbôa abrír em huma rua os Alicérces para se fazêrem humas cásas, sem licênça da câmera, passândo poralli o procuradôr da cidáde, pôz pêna aos officiáes, que não trabalhássem na obra sem licênça dos Vereadôres; e os officiáes dizêndo-o ao Fidálgo mandôu-lhes elle que não deixássem de trabalhár, e que não fizéssem caso do que dizía aquelle villão ruim; tornândo procuradôr da cidáde por allí e achândo os officiáes trabalhândo, mandôu que déssem com elles no tronco; e não faltândo quem lhe contásse o que o Fidálgo disséra, têve-o em ôlho; e no tempo que elle hía atravessândo pello Rocío para sua casa, sahío-lhe ao camínho a cavállo, e com huma lança que leváva, dândo na sua sômbra, lhe disse: "Porque o

que disséstes, fôi em minha ausência, dôu em vóssa sômbra; se mo tivésseis ditto no rosto, déra na vossa pessôa."

Abou Hanífah, o mais célebre doutor dos Mussulmanes, têndo recebído huma bofetáda, dísse ao que o tínha insultádo: "Eu podería vingárme, pagândovos na mesma moéda; mas nao quéro fazêr. Podería accusárvos ao calife: mas não quero ser accusadôr. Podería nas minhas oraçõens queixárme a Dêos désta affronta; mas nem isso quéro fazêr. Por fim podería pedír a Dêos, que se quer no día do juizo vos castigásse; porêm o mesmo senhor me livre de semelhânte pensamênto; mas ântes, se succedêsse que neste instânte chegasse aquelle formidavel día; e se a minha intercessão tivésse algúma efficácia para com Dêos, nao quizéra por companhéiro senao a vós para entrár no Paraíso." Que admirável exêmplo para os Christaos aprendêrem a perdoár as injúrias!

### Da Peregrinação.

Passadas que se dao peregrinândo, sao degráos para a cása do desengâno. Das suas fôntes sáhem os rios muito pequênos, e créscem corrêndo, e lévao mares ao mar. Hómens, que da sua terra nao sâhem, sao navíos, que acábao no estalêiro. A sabedoría cômo vínda do céo, anda neste globo terréstre peregrína; nao he facil achála senão peregrinândo; errândo por este mundo, se apprênde o nao comettêr erros. Vapôres, que na terra éram lôdo, apartádos della se fazam estrêllas. Aos hómens que querem luzír, déve a pátria servír, como aos planêtas o horizônte, de berço, para ensáyo do seu luzimênto, longe do ponto ortívo e remontádos a mais alta regiao, apúrao as influências, e duplícao as luzes. Que nome terião

hoje no mundo Sócrates, Pithágoras, e Platao, e outros sábios da antiguidade, se a modo de cêpos, ou trôncos, que aônde nascêrao fázem raiz e no seu primêiro cháo apodrécem, náo buscárao fora da Patria as notícias, que lhes faltávao. Não se ornára Hercules com os despójos dos Monstros, que domôu, se os não fôra buscár pelo mundo; á sua dilatáda viágem dévem os Argonautas a conquista do vello de ouro. Se não corrêra Ulysses remótos climas, fôra a Aldêa de Ithaca de toda a sua gloria o theátro. Hómens perpétuamênte casêiros, sao gallos, que só sábem do seu poléiro. Sábios peregrinos, imitao no seu curso as fôntes, que passândo por vêas de prata, ouro, emeráldas, e saffíras, tómao, e comsigo lévao a flor de suas preciósas qualidádes. Zombe embóra Plutarco dos que lôuvao a peregrinação, e diga, que se parecem com os que júlgao as estrêllas errântes mais nobres, e felices, que as fixas. Não há escóla mais util para a vida, que as muítas vidas ou modos de vivêr, que na variedade das Naçõens se obsérva. Vem-se muitas cousas nunca vistas; aprêndem-se muitas, que se nao sabíao, faz-se o hómem capaz de toda a casta de negócios, e folga de vêr este mundo, antes de sahír delle. Até para os principes, que das suas côrtes fázem na terra o seu paraíso, bom he que peregrinem, para conhecêrem o mundo, que elles govêrnao. Os commodos, as delícias, os obséquios dos subditos, pódem dar a conhecêr a hum hómem, que nascêo soberâno, mas com este conhecimênto, nao o fazem digno da soberanía: se nao sahíra Alexandre da sua Macedonia, não passára dos limítes de régulo e não chegara a avassallar o mundo.

# Do Tempo futuro.

Trate o hómem do prêsente, e não quéira penetrár no futuro; quem de tão longe poem a mira, não póde dar no alvo. Muítas vezes bom hé igno-

rár o que ha de succedêr; porque se fôr bem, a dilacáo hé tormênto; e se fôr máo, o trabálho he sem provéito. Para futúros, não ha segurança. Ao Embaixadôr, que na guerra movída por Luiz XI. Rev de Frânca, a Carlos Duque de Borgônha, procuráva attrahír ao Emperadôr Frederico, com proméssa de se repartírem com elle os despójos, e os estádos, respondêo o dito Emperador com este apólogo: "Tres caçadôres com a esperânça de apanharem hum urso, se compromettêrao na reparticao delle. Chegádos á boca da cavérna, sahío a féra com tao grande impeto, que hum dos caçadôres botôu a fugír, outro subío a huma árvore, e o outro se estendêo no chao fingíndo-se morto; chegouse o urso a elle, poz-lhe o focinho no nariz, e nos ouvidos, e nao lhe conhecêndo fólego, nem sínal de vida, o deixôu por morto. O que estáva na árvore, dísse ao companhêiro; hómem, que te dísse o urso, quando te fallôu á puridade, com o focínho nos ouvídos? Disseme que éra mal feíto, dispôr da pelle, e carne do urso. antes de o vêrem morto. Com isto o Emperadôr dêu a entendêr ao Embaixadôr, que éra preciso apanhár priméiro ao Duque de Borgônha, que depôis se trataría da repartição dos seus estádos. Dos succéssos do tempo futuro, só Deos tem certêza."

#### Dos Ricos.

Em lugáres estereis, sem hervas, nem plantas produz a naturêza o ouro, para mostrár que os amadôres das riquêzas nao tem fé, nem honra. Os ricos facinorôsos, que ainda que celebrádos nas histórias, sao o oppróbrio da sua posteridade, poderíao ter bôa fâma, se lhes nao facilitára este metal a execução de seus danados intêntos. Em todas as idades fôrao as riquêzas antagonistas da virtúde; ellas inventárao os mais enórmes delítos; ellas ensinárao os filhos a tirár a seus páis a vida; ensinárao os filhos a ti

sinárao os poderósos a opprimír os innocêntes, arruinár as famílias, saqueár os templos, e despír os altáres; ellas induzirao os amígos a que faltássem á fé, incitárao os vassállos a negár aos príncipes a obediência, a os libidinósos dérao meyos para violar a pudicícia das donzéllas, e estragár a honra dos marídos: finalmênte ellas ainda que bôas para a yida civil, sao causa de tôdos os máles; e pôsto que os sábios se soubérao aproveitár déllas, a cobica, e o máo uso das mesmas, enchêrao o mundo tôdo de criminósos. Hómens ricos ordináriamênte se pérdem, por têrem muíto, e sabêrem pouco; desprézao o sabêr, porque lhes paréce, que para todo o género de vida, lhes basta o têr. A Aristippo perguntôu Dionysio, porque razão os filósofos frequentávao as cazas dos ricos, e não os ricos as dos filósofos. Respondêo Aristippo, que os filósofos conhécem o que lhes falta, e os ricos ignórao o de que necessitao. Senhôres ricos, e filósofos pobres, não pódem fazêr cousas grândes, porque a estes lhes falta dinhêiro, e áquêlles espírito. Dizía Diógenes, que muitos ricos são como as plantas, que nascem em desértos, e despenhadêiros, porque dos frutos. que ellas dao, nao cómem os homens, mas córvos, milháfres, e féras; também as riquêzas de muitos nao sao para sugêitos beneméritos, mas para chocarrêiros, espadachins, rufiões, e meretrízes.

Huma historia sincéra envergonha-se da gloria vaã, que se busca em antiguidades mentirozas: Desgosta-se desses sonhos agradaveis, pasto de huma esteril recreação; e se saborêa só com a ver-

Estado da Lusitania até ao Tempo em que foi reduzida em Provincia Romana, Por A. C. do Amaral. Extrahido das Memorias da Academia de Lisbôa.

dade pura. Tal hé a sorte deste escrito, derigido a fazer prezentes aos Portugueses os verdadeiros costumes, e Leis de seus Maiores: rejeita tudo quanto a impostura, ou a credulidade moderna lhe conta dos Seculos, que a Providencia quiz esconder-lhe: e se contenta com as escassas memorias, que pode colhêr dos raros monumentos antigos que lhe restao. Não tenta entrar pelas espêssas trevas dos primeiros 36 Seculos do mundo, em que não acha quem o encaminhe. Pois que os Hebreos unicos guias -Seguros, que introduzem em muitos outros paizes, nem hum só passo dão para este que habitamos; e apenas dao motivo a conjecturar, que das Colonias sahidas do Oriente para povoár a terra, algumas se estendêrão até a esta extremidade; mas nem donde, nem quando viessem o pode colhêr a historia.

Não acha depois dos Hebreos outros, de quem se fie, senão os Romanos: e ainda estes pouco lhe sabem dizér de hum Paiz táo apartado, em quanto a ambicão de o senhorear os não avizinha a elle: mal conservão huma obscura tradição de que a estas partes vierao Celtas, Iberos, Persas, Lusos, e Gregos: de huns apenas ficára resto na derivacão do nôme; de outros na herança de alguns costumes. A navegação com que alguns Póvos do fundo do Mediterráneo coméção a enriquecer, as traz até estas ultimas Costas, e vai logo espalhar pello Mundo, a fama das ricas minas, e do fertil torrão deste Paiz desconhecido ainda, antes que da qualidade de seus habitantes: não tarda com tudo a mostrar-se esta; continúa a vir em busca dos thesouros descobertos á ambição estrangeira; e vé erguer daqui, quaes féras acossadas nos seus covís, homens bravos para defender os bens que a Providencia lhes destinára. E esta hé a primeira Scena que se nos representa no Terreno Lusitano; hum Campo de Batálha, continuáda já com os Fenicios, já com os Carthaginezes; que depois de disputarem por largo tempo com estes Barbaros a sorte das armas, os deixao ainda por domár aos Romanos quando lhes cedem a conquista de Mundo. Mas ao justo motivo da defeza propria succedem depois outros, que facilmente pôem as armas na mão a huns homens, a quem a falta do commercio, e de artes quasi não deixa outro meio de enriquecêr, que a pilhagem; nôme com que muitas das suas guerras são infamadas pelos Póvos mais polidos que elles. E o mesmo habito de peleijar lhes vai alimentando hum natural feróz, que já os não deixa accommodar com o socêgo da paz, e que os faz buscar inimigos dentro em caza, quando lhes faltao os de fóra.

Estes vicios, e virtudes de guerra, hé o que de principio nelles distinguem os Romanos, não os vendo senão armados no campo; e de que não podem deixar de dar testemunho estes mesmos vaidosos desprezadores de tudo o que não hé Romano. Mas em fim á medida que se lhes chegão mais perto, e se envolvem com elles, lá vão divisando por entre alguns claros, que as armas deixão, a

forma do seu governo interiôr.

Vém que este Terreno, que designao pelo nome de Lusitania, hé habitado de Póvos differentes independentes huns dos outros, e governados cada hum por suas Leis, costumes particulares; leis ráras, e costumes singelos, ainda com a marca da Natureza nao contrafeita.

Como a segurança propria hé quem só fórma estes córpos, nao largao da liberdade que recebêrao da natureza, mais que o puramente preciso para conservar essa mesma segurança. A guerra a que sao dados he que os obriga a criar hum Superior, a que jurao fidelidade; mas conseguida a paz, expira o governo do General, e a obediencia dos Soldados.

Se há que estabelecêr de novo para o bem commum do Sociedade, servem-se do meio usado das puras Democracias, Assembléas geráes, em que cada pessoa tem o arbitrio de approvar, ou rejeitar o que se propôem: e ainda nesta acçáo respira o ar militar, em que sao criados; hum batêr da espada no broquel he o signal de approvação; hum susurro inquieto o de desapprovar.

A' simplicidade da Legislação segue a das penas; são os réos do crime capital apedrejados, e para que o horror do crime se extenda alêm ainda do castigo, todo o que passa depois da execução, hé obrigado a lançar alguma pedra sobre o cadáver

do justiçado.

Não desmente da parte Legislativa, a do Commercio interior ainda pouco sujeito a fraudes; não os move a contratar a sêde insaciavel do ouro, que mal conhecem: as mutuas necessidades, a que só procurão soccorrêr, os ensina a trocar entre si as cousas precisas á vida. Estas lhes dictão tambem o que devem concedêr ao corpo; comeres, e bebidas simples, quaes a Natureza as produsia: vestidos sem mais estudo que o do fim para que os usão; câma sem regalo, nem despeza; emfim a tudo o preciso para a conservação se accode com o menos apparato que póde ser.

A esta sobriedade bem propria de si para dar a saude, e vigôr do corpo, ajuntao o trabalho aturado; os homens o da guerra quasi contínua, e nos intervallos della o de exercicios semelhantes á guerra; as mulheres o da cultura dos campos, e de todo o trato domestico, que com discreta economia lhes he cedido pelos homens occupados com as armas. E se faz memoria dos seus bailes, e cantares, nao sao tanto fructo do ocio, como do innocente prazêr da

vida social.

Deste modo sobrio, e trabalhado de vida era consequencia a raridade de doenças: para alguma, que accaso haja, nao hé venal a cura, nem o remedio, nao se tendo alguem por desobrigado de con-

correr para hum officio de rigorosa humanidade; hé o enfermo exposto em publico; e os que tem sido feridos do mesmo mal ensinao os remedios

com que conseguirao a saude.

Nos que habitávao as vizinhanças do Minho, como erao os Gronios, ou Gravios, os Amphilocios, e outros, se vem assaz retratados os costumes dos Gregos, de quem os Antigos querem que elles descendao: Jogos, e certames públicos, cazamentos, arte de augurar tudo hé de Gregos. Idólatras como seus Maiores, nada conservao da Religião pura que a Razáo lhes mostrára, mais que o reconhecimento de que há hum. Ente maior que elles, a que devem dar culto: porém estragado este natural sentimento pela corrupção do coração, imaginao Divindades indignas, a que honrao com hum culto igualmente indigno. Se querem dar-lhes graças pello feliz successo de huma batalha, as maos direitas doz prizioneiros sao o triste troféo que lhes levântao. Se antes de qualquer acção procúrao saber o seu bom ou máo exito, dentro ás entranhas de hum inimigo he que vão buscar este fatal segredo: se querem fazer religioso hum juramento, hé preciso que as entranhas quentes de hum homem, e de hum cavallo lhes sirvao de banho, em que depois de mettidas as maos, as pôem sobre o altar, junto ao qual se deve fazer esta ridicula ceremonia. Emfim he sempre sangue o que applaca huns Deoses, que estes Idolatras guerreiros formávao á sua semelhanca.

Estes são os poucos vestigios, e quasi apagados, que se encontrão dos costumes domesticos dos Lusitanos, que de ordinario só se viao no campo de batalha, detendo, ou fazendo retroceder os passos aos Conquistadores do mundo. Mal o poderá crêr quem mede a força de hum Estado pelo fausto de seus habitadores, pela magnificencia de suas obras, e por todo o explendôr que encanta os sentidos; quem

não avalia quanto póde hum Povo, em que todos os individuos são aptos para a defesa da Patria, em que há tantos Soldados como homens endurecidos todos no trabalho, e todos animados do amôr da liberdade.

Hum Povo, como este, foi o que sem arte, e sem disciplina, em tendo na frente hum homem que o soubesse mandar, escarneu por muitas vezes das tropas mais bem reguladas, e deu muitos dias de mágoa, e de deslustre aos soberbos Romanos. Viriato, Sertorio, e ainda outros de menos nôme forao instrumentos da gloria Lusitana, que sobrepujando á emulação ficou eternizada nos escritos de seus mesmos inimigos, e nos marmores que o tempo consumidôr não acabou de gastar.

Por mais de Seculo e meio andárao os Romanos na porfiada lida de subjugar este ultimo pedaco da Hespanha que já contao toda por huma porção certa dos seus dominios: todos os annos lhe nomeao Governadôr: mas por mais que tentem mandar Pretor como para Provincia pacifica, a cada passo se vem obrigados a lhe mandar Consul armado; depois de teren separado o seu Governo do de quasi todo o esto da Hespanha. E se dequando em quando algum destes Generáes consegue a gloria de a pacificar, e sujeitar ás Leis Romanas, pouco tempo lhe dura verde o louro; na sua mesma cabeca lhe murcha, ou ao mais tarde na de seu successor: até que a longa experiencia os desengana, que hé preciso mudar de systema; e que só costumando primeiro os Lusitanos a se sujeitar como amigos, hé que os poderão insensivelmente ir passando a obedecer como Vassalos.

Sobre a Poesia Bucolica dos Poétas Portuguêzes. Por Joaquim de Foyos. Extrahido das Memorias de Litteratura da Academia de Lisbôa.

Assim como entre as duas especies de oração, por

que o homem tanto excede aos outros animaes, se cultivou primeiro o Verso, assim de todas as sortes de Poesías parece ter sido primeira a Bucolica. Ainda que o genero humano nao nascêo da terra, e dos duros troncos das árvores, como iniaginárao muitos Poetas, e parece que chegárao a crêr alguns Filosofos; com tudo depois do diluvio, espalhados os homens por toda a face da terra, e perdidos pouco a pouco os conhecimentos que herdárao de seus maiores, e só conservávao na Sociedade, hé summamente provavel, que huma grande parte delles viesse successivamente a passar por estes tres generos de vida: Selvagem, Pastoral, Agricola. Os muitos Póvos, que ainda hoje habitao, e se achao na primeira, ou segunda destas vidas, confirmaõ a verdade desta conjectura. Mas o homem, vivendo humá vida silvestre nos bosques, separado de toda a Sociedade, e sustentando-se unicamente de caça, e dos fructos espontaneos da terra, nem se acha em circumstancias de adiantar os seus conhecimentos, nem tem tempo para cultivallos, occupado, e attento todo em buscar o necessario fysico, que não pode achar sem muita difficuldade, e trabalho. E ainda que aconteça, que por vezes lhe sobre algum espaço livre destas continuas fadigas, satisfeitos todos os seus naturáes desejos, e appetites, cançado o côrpo, e entorpecidos os membros, lhe entorpecerao juntamente as faculdades da alma, desacostumadas a discorrer, e a exercitar-se em outros objectos, e se entregará docemente a o somno. Não succederá assim aos Pastores, que tendo gado, que com seu leite lhes subministre o sustento, e com suas pelles o vestido, passarão huma boa parte da sua vida quietos, e descançados, sem mais outro cuidado que o de conduzir, e defender os seus rebanhos, e manadas. Obrigados de necessidades mutuas, e attrahidos do natural deleite, que causa a companhia dos que tem as mesmas precisões que nós, e nellas nos podem dar

algum auxilio, e recebello, se chegaráo, quando o permittir a abundancia dos pastos, huns para os outros, communicarão entre si os seus pensamentos, e desejos, praticarão sobre as cousas que mais amao, e celebrarão a sua felicidade.

Huma vez juntos os homens, e em ócio, contentes, e sem cançaço, impossivel hé, que nao inventem diversos jogos, e toda a sorte de desenfado, e recreacão para evitar o tedio de huma vida socegada, e Entre estes divertimentos não devia ter ultimo lugar a Poesia. As faculdades do homem tem huma natural disposição para ella; ou a Poesia consista na imitação, como querem Platão, e Aristoteles, ainda que clara e distinctamente nunca nos dissessem o que esta imitação seja; ou em huma oração levantada sobre as expressões vulgares, invertida com figuras, e harmoniosamente modulada, e compassada com o metro, e com o rhythmo. Em qualquer destas cousas que façamos consistir a Poesia, ou em todas ellas, para todas recebeo o homem da Natureza huma admiravel propensão.

As nossas sensações sao não sómênte a origem, e fundamento de todas as nossas idéas, mas transformando-se de diversos modos, sao todos os nossos juizos, e raciocinios, as nossas artes, as nossas Sciencios, e, em huma palavra, tudo quanto sabemos, e conhecemos. Mas a imitação hé huma sensação facil, e para que está disposta a conformação dos nossos orgaos, e das nossas potencias, e por consequencia huma sensação, que nós achâmos por extremo grata, e deleitavel. Deste mesmo principio se segue outro, o qual aqui igualmente pertence, e vem a ser, que hé natural ao homem nao só a oraçáo, e a harmonia, mas tambem essa mesma oração variada com differentes tropos, e figuras; isto hé, com diversos modos de exprimir as cousas, e os pensamentos, já com a mesma harmonia; isto he,

com o rhythmo, e já com o metro.

Conhecer-se-ha claramente a dependencia que estes dous principios tementre si, se considerar-mos, que a imitação, (a qual eu já mostrei ser hum exercicio summamente gostoso ao homem, e hum modo facillimo assim de elle apprender como de communicar aos outros os seus sentimentos) huma vez feita, e praticada com a oração, traz necessariamente comsigo todas aquellas variedades da mesma oração, que apontei acima. Daqui vem affirmarem agudamente, e com razáo justissima os mais célebres Filosofos, que quizerao descer a discussões deste genero, que a Poesia era tao antiga, como o genero humano. Certamente parece ter nascido logo com as primeiras Sociedades, que elles formárao, e quando elles conservavao ainda muito, assim da rusticidade, como da singeleza, e innocencia natural. Do que parece, ou claramente provado, ou deduzido com assaz probabilidade, que a Poesia nasceo, e se inventou entre Pastores. Mas em que genero de Poesia se exercitaría estes primeiros homens? Não será difficil conhecello, se reflectirmos, qual seria a materia que, segundo as circumstancias em que se achavao, se lhes offerecia para os seus cantos. toteles foi de parecêr, que dos primeiros inventores os que tinhao genio elevado imitavao accoes illustres, e feitas por personagens grandes, e pelo contrario os que tinhao engenho mais rasteiro, cantavao as accões dos homens vis, em cujo vitupério compunhao obras ridiculas, assim como os outros se exercitávão em hymnos e encomios.

Porém este erudito, e intelligente Filosofo nao fala naquelle lugar da primeira origem da Poesia rigorosamente, mas sim do modo com que ella, depois de inventada, se foi dividindo em diversas especies; porque suppõe tempos em que hé já grande a disigualdade dos homens; o que não tem lugar nas primeiras e simplicissimas sociedades de Pas-

tores.

Hé pois summamente verosimil, que estes homens quizessem imitar aquellas cousas, que com mais frequencia se offerecião aos seus sentidos, que satisfaziao as suas necessidades, e que constituíao a bemaventurança da sua socegada vida, e felice estado, por que nellas empregavao toda a sua attenção, e cuidado. Cantaríao pois os seus rebanhos, os montes e os valles, em que os apascentávao, os rios, e fontes, a que os levávao a bebêr; a alva, e serêna madrugada, que os chamava ao trabalho; a sésta, que os convidava ao descanço; e os rafeiros, que lhes guardavao o gado. Cantaríao, como era natural, as paixões e affectos da sua alma; porém naõ affectos violentos, e desesperados, que não erão próprios daquella vida, mas dôces e suaves, e que só lhes causávao aquella inquietação, e desasocego, a que se nao pudesse seguir fim algum funesto.

Como estes argumentos são todos proprios da Poesia Bucolica, segue-se ligitimamente, que ella foi a primeira, que no Mundo inventárao os homens. Sendo pois a Poesia Pastoral a primeira origem de toda a erudição humana, e os primeiros esforços, que fizerao as faculdades do homem para se pulirem, e cultivarem, justamente me persuadi, que a Academia instituida toda para utilidade pública, e que alem de outros mais gloriosos, e louvaveis empenhos, tomou a si o de dar a conhecer os principios, e progressos da nossa Litteratura, havia de levar em gosto que hum Socio seu tratasse dos merecimentos dos nossos Poetas Bucolicos. Deste trabalho, Senhores, posto que maior que minhas forças, me quiz encarregar, por ser dos mais leves e faceis, que tao illustre corpo podia commetter a algum de

seus membros.

Vós tratareis verdades sublimes, por extremo remotas, e escondidas á commum comprehensão dos homens; medireis o espaço immenso dos Céos; poreis Leis aos corpos mais vastos, mais distantes,

e até mais rebeldes do Universo; com vossas porfiadas investigações, e rara sagacidade obrigareis a Natureza a que vos descubra, e patentêe aquillo mesmo, em que ella punha maior estudo em occul-Assim para felicidade dos outros homens augmentareis, e aperfeicoareis os seus conhecimentos; mas sereis muito particularmente felices vós, e feliz a Patria, em cuja utilidade haveis de empregar os vossos talentos, e todos estes trabalhos, e fadigas: e ella vo lo saberá agradecer com o premio, que só desejão as almas grandes, do louvôr e da gloria. Eu, gozando-me, e comprazendo-me do vosso alto merecimento, de que vós quizestes me coubesse tambem alguma parte, me contentarei com examinar a propriedade, e elegancia de huma palavra; a verdade, novidade, e belleza de hum pensamento; a innocencia, e sa singeleza de hum Pegureiro; e isto propter aquæ rivum, ou quando muito, sub ramis arboris alta.

Mas tornando ao meu assumpto, de que me fizerao desviar os vossos justos louvôres, nao sao pouco relevantes, nem concorrem medianamente para a instruccáo, e cultura dos homens os trabalhos dos Poetas. Negallo seria nao conhecer o modo, por que se dilatao, e aperfeiçoao as nossas faculdades, e ignorar inteiramente a Historia dos varios progressos do entendimento humano. A restauração das letras, com que se desterrou a ignorancia, e barbaridade, a que nos tinhao reduzido as Nações do Norte, e as continuas irrupções dos Sarracenos, tem as suas sementes nos Trovadores Provençaes e Lombardos, que fructificando felizmente chegárao a produzir os dous abalisados engenhos de Dante, e Petrarca. Cultivada por estes dous grandes homens, e por alguns mais seus contemporaneos a Lingua Toscana, preparou a Italia, e á sua imitação a toda a Europa para hum conhecimento profundo da Lingua Latina, e da Grega. Com taes

disposicões, e auxilios se instruiraõ as Nações Européas nas Artes, e Sciencias, e em toda a sorte de erudição daquelles sabios Póvos; e inflammadas cada vez mais no desejo de saber, tem levado muitas das Artes, e Sciencias dos antigos a hum ponto incrivel de perfeição, &c.

Analyse e Combinações filosoficas sobre a Elocução e Estylo de Sá de Miranda, Ferreira, Bernardes, Caminha, e Camões. Pr. Francisco Dias.

Quando entrei nesta composição, julguei que devia tomar hum ponto fixo, donde viesse deduzindo a sua analyse, e que o Sá de Miranda devia indispensavelmente formar a época, donde, segundo a ordem do tempo, havia de dimanar todo o seu progresso, como de hum escritor, que lançou os fundamentos da Poesia Portugueza. Mas antes que entrasse nesta diligencia, vi que me era de precisa necessidade fazer huma descripção exacta do estado em que se achava a Lingua, quando o Poeta Miranda appareceo, e sondar as qualidades principaes da composicao e estylo daquelle Padre da Poesia Portugueza, donde passou para Ferreira, para Bernardes, para Caminha, e ultimamente para Càmões, o maior Poeta da Nação, e o que mais enriqueceo, e apurou o nosso Idioma; discorrendo por aquelles pontos, que mais me parecerão dignos de comparacao no género Sublime, como mais nobre, e como aquelle que mais esforço pede da fantasía humana; fazendo juizo de cada hum dos Poetas da Analyse, e finalmente indicando as origens donde nascêrao as expressões, e fórmulas combinadas; no que julge ter satisfeito ao Assumpto, que hé certamente mais difficultoso do que parece.

Na execução deste tão trabalhoso argumento me conduzi, segundo as luzes, que pude adquirir na

lição de Aristoteles, Cicero, Longino, Quintiliano, e muito mais na de Locke, Condillac, Du Marsais, e em especial na do sobre todos sabio Commentario, que o grande Voltaire fêz ás Obras de Pedro Corneille, onde se vêm as regras do gosto na sua maior elevação.

Todas estas materias são novas em Portugal, e por consequencia não tive a quem seguir: e apezar

dos defeitos, posso dizer,

..... que aqui vereis presente Cousas, que juntas se áchao raramente. Camões, Lus.

# Introducção.

Hé o talento da palavra a mais nobre faculdade do ente racional, como instrumento, com que nao só expõe as suas idéas, mas até pinta os mais occultos sentimentos do espirito com rasgos tao vivos, e sublimes, que os faz passar aos corações mais izentos de interesse. Aquella Filosofía inata ao coração do homem, que preside a todas as acções, que mais o elévao, foi quem formou os sináes representativos das suas idéas simplices, e compostas; e quem, á força de infinitas combinações, lhe fez conceber o grande pensamento do transumpto mental consignado nas palavras por huma successão de idéas nao interrompidas, cujo nexo constitue a pintura eterna não só do fysico, mas, o que hé mais prodigiôso, do moral humano.

Aquella mesma filosofia, que dirigindo e elevando o espirito humano desde as idéas simplices até ás implexas, lhe dêo as primeiras noções da expressaõ simples he primitiva, como mais adaptada ás necessidades do homem; á proporção que lhe foi ampliando a esféra dos seus conhecimentos, lhe foi ministrando expressão compléxa, isto hé, figurada com a qual pinta aos olhos, e dá corpo, e vida ás mais sublimes abstracções, que pode concebêr o entendimento humano.

Deste immenso aggregado de idéas simplíces, e compostas, como consequencia natural, procedeo a vivacidade da expressão, e a riqueza das Linguas, que se elevárão ao mais distincto gráo de perfeição, segundo o numero de acontecimentos, e revoluções notaveis; e muito mais segundo o trato frequente com as nações estranhas, e communicação social dos póvos entre si; por isso mesmo que das grandes crizes procede a effervescencia das paixões, que pondo em movimento, e actividade a massa das idéas, gera nóvos pensamentos, e nova elocução.

Daqui se infére, que os melhores de todos os idiomas devem forçosamente ser os daquelles póvos que mais revoluções experimentárao, e que melhor conhecêrao as leis da Sociedade. Vê-se pois pello que nos ensina a historia, que as Nações mais pulidas e sábias, tanto na linguagem, como nos costumes, fôrao quasi sempre as que situadas junto ao mar conhecêrao mais cedo a necessidade da communicação dos póvos estranhos, por meio do Commercio; ou aquellas, cujos acontecimentos lhes dérão lugar distincto nos annáes do genero hu-

mano.

Por isso vemos, que as Linguas geraes do Malabar, Coromandel, e da China regiões maritimas, assim como tambem a Arabe, saõ as mais bellas, e antigas de todas as Linguas da Asia. Os Póvos da Grecia, que gozando do mais formoso espectaculo da Natureza, experimentárao tantas, e tao notaveis revoluções, inventarao o mais significativo, e harmónico de todos os Idiomas, onde se achao consignádos os mais insignes monumentos do génio, e dônde procedêo a magestade da Lingua dos Romanos, nao mais famosos pelas suas conquistas, que pelos escriptos immortáes, com que illustrárao os Seculos. O mesmo se deve considerar dos Italianos, Francêzes, Hespanhóes, e Inglezes, cujos Idiomas tendo erigem na Lingua Latina, se tem elevado ao mais

alto ponto de perfeição possivel, e nos quaes existem monumentos para quem todo o louvôr hé diminúto.

Mas este concurso de circunstancias parece, que ainda não foi a causa sufficiente da perfeição das Linguas: ainda ali se diviza hum vácuo, que preciza ser occupado. Aqui vem á Poesía com toda a sua pompa e magestade, desatando or vôos, pulindo e aperfeiçoando os Idiomas, dando a tudo alma, e vida, já elevando-se aos maiores assumptos nos louvôres do Ente Supremo, e no Panegyrico dos grandes homens, persuadindo a imitação das acções nobres, e dignas dos mais distinctos applausos. Ella lhe abre os seus thesouros: ella os enriquece; ella lhes dá força, elegancia, e harmonía, sem o que seriao huns cadáveres seccos, e inanimádos. Sem a Poesia, nada seriao talvez os Gregos, e os Românos, que tanto enchêrao o mundo com a fama das suas victorias, com a grandeza das suas acções, e muito mais com a perfeição, com que cultivárao todas as Artes de génio, de que tantos, e tao admiraveis testemunhos nos deixárao principalmente nos seus escritos, Poesía pois, que tendo entre os antigos hum caracter de harmonia muito diverso da Poesía moderna, veio pella ignorancia dos Seculos a tal decadencia, que pouco faltou par ficar inteiramente ignorada.

Das reliquias da Lingua Latina, e Grêga se formárao os Idiomas modernos, com diversa Syntaxe; e com elles resuscitárao, ou por melhor dizer, formárao os Provençaes huma Poesía toda nova na disposição das cesuras, e combinações harmónicas.

Os Italianos restauradôres de quasi todas as Artes, fôrao os primeiros, que tratárao a Poesia com dignidade, aperfeiçoando os metros, e harmonías, que os mesmos Provençáes, e Sicilianos tinhao inventado; e tanto se applicárao a ella, que já no decimo quarto Seculo era famoso Poeta o celebre Dante, quem fixou todas as accentuações harmonicas do hende-

casyllabo, que ficou sendo o mais necessario metro da Poesia Italiana, Castelhana, e Portugueza.

Entrárao os Mouros em Hespanha, e com elles a Poesía: porem o desassocêgo da guerra nao dêo lugar aos antigos possuidores desta Região, tao infestada de Nações estranhas, a cultivar a Poesía seriamente, nem a pulir os seus Idiomas tao cedo como os Italianos. Da longa dominação, que os Romanos tiverao em Hespanha se havia nella introduzido o uzo da Lingua Latina, que veio a ser vulgar: della, e de varios dialectos barbaros, se formárao os dous mais bellos, e sonoros Idiomas de Hespanha, e talves da Europa, o Castelhano, e o Por-

tuguez.

Estas duas Linguas se forao igualmente aperfeiçoando, de sorte que a hum mesmo tempo chegárao ao seu auge. Com tudo, sendo a Nação Portugueza mais moderna, e occupando muito menos espaço de terreno, que a Castelhana, veio mais cedo a produzir monumentos, que assaz distinguírao, e acreditárao o seu Idiôma. As historias de João de Barros dadas á lúz no meio do Seculo decimo sexto, e traduzidas em todas as Linguas cultas da Europa, fizerao mostrar ao Mundo litterário, que a Lingua Portugueza era a mais filha da Latina. numero sufficiente de Escritores, que logo depois vierao, acabárao de determinar o genio da Lingua, cujo caracter hé elegancia, e perspicuidade. Sendo pois a Lingua Portugueza desde a sua origem mui dôce e sonóra, resultado natural da quantidade proporcionada das suas vogáes e consoântes, das quaes as primeiras, não são tão frequentes e conjunctas, que enfraquêção a harmonia, e fáção languida e pouco notada, como se vê na Lingua Italiana; nem as segundas com nimia frequencia se atropellao, e produzem sons rudes e asperos, como nas Linguas do Norte. Todas estas felices disposições, além do genio, convidávao a Nação á cultura da

Poesia para que sempre teve natural inclinação. Deixemos a miúda investigação destas causas, a qual será mais propria de quem tentar escrevêr a historia de Lingua. Deixemos tambem as Poesías anteriôres ao Seculo de quinhentos, muitas das quaes existem em algumas Bibliothecas antigas, como as d' El Rei D. Diniz, na do Convento da Ordem de Christo em Thomar, e outras andaõ empregadas no celebre Cancioneiro de Resende, collecção preciosa, donde se podem extrahir as maiores luzes a respeito da Natureza, e origem da nossa Poesía: e comecando a tratar do auge a que esta elevou a Lingua Portugueza; as graças e numero que lhe communicou; principiaremos a discorrêr de huma época mais vizinha a nos, e esta seja determinada pelo famôso Sá de Miranda.

Vejâ-mos pois os assumptos, que este Poeta tratou, a qualidade de sua imitação em geral, o uzo que fez do hendecasyllabo, até ao seu tempo pouco ou nada conhecido em Portugal, e em toda a Hespanha; como tratou, como aperfeiçoou o Sonêto, do qual se deve reputar inventor entre nós, novas graças que accrescentou á nossa Lingua, e como finalmente preparou aos Poetas, que lhe succedêrao, hum novo caminho para se elevárem até a immortal

Lusiada.

Mas antes que entremos neste exame, vejâmos primeiro o estado em que o Sá de Miranda, achou o Idioma.

A Nação Portugueza, que até ao fim do reinado de D. Fernando jazia na ignorancia, occupada unicamente da cultura das suas terras, quanto lhe era preciso para o consumo interior do Reino, e para entreter huma ligeira sombra de commercio exterior, continuamente vexado pella tyrannía Arabica, que infestando os mares, era eterno obstaculo á navegação; vivendo como desterrada na solidão dos campos, sem communicação, nem policia, fallava

huma linguagem informe, e grosseira, chêa de sons rudes, que as Linguas barbaras lhe tinhao communicado; e a pezar de ter huma origem tao pura, como a Lingua Latina, donde procedia, só conserváva alguma energía natural nascida das significações primitivas das suas vózes, que, alem de serem maculadas de infinitas anomalias, e dissonancias, erao privadas de translações, que dao força e elevação a os Idiomas. Chêa pois de construcções erróneas, de diphtongos ásperos, e desinencias rudes, póbre de termos, sem idéa do nexo, que subsiste nas particulas, sem syntaxe, sem harmonia o seu periodo incerto, e desunido vacillára sem carácter.

A grande revolução de D. João I. fazendo a mais viva commoção no genio dos Portuguezes, com ella lhe viérão novos estimulos de gloria, que eleva o espirito; novas emprezas, novos pensamentos, nova força, nova energía ás suas enunciações; novos objectos do discurso, e nova linguágem. Hum Latim barbaro até alli organo das Leis, e instrumentos publicos, cessou de ser a linguágem do

Fôro.

Da conquista de Ceuta nasceo a idéa, a grande idéa dos descubrimentos, que mostrando a necessidade de cultivar as Mathematicas, e a Astronomia, taes quaes existiáo naquelles tempos obscuros, alargou a esféra da Mechanica, que fazendo novas investigações sobre a acção, dos ventos, e resistencia das agoas, extrahindo a somma da combinação dos movimentos resultantes da acção e reacção destes dous Elementos, alcançou mais perfeito conhecimento das leis dos liquidos, e do equilibrio, e aperfeiço finalmente a Arte de navegar. Novos Astros, novos mares e costas, novas ilhas, novos mundos enchem de admiração tôdo o universo.

EXTRACTOS POETICOS.

From the third Canto of the Lusiad of Camões.

ESTA'VAS linda Inez posta em sossêgo,
De teus annos colhêndo o dôce fruto,
Naquêlle engâno da alma, lédo, e cêgo,
Que a fortúna nao deixa durár muíto:
Nos saudósos câmpos do Mondêgo,
De teus formósos olhos núnca enxúto,
Aos montes ensinândo, e as ervínhas.
O nome, que no peito escríto tínhas,

Do teu príncipe alli te respondíao As lembrânças, que na alma lhe morávao, Que sempre ante seus olhos te trazíao: Quando dos teus formósos se apartávao: De noite em dôces sônhos, que mentíao, De dia em pensamêntos, que voávao: E quanto em fim cuidáva, e quanto vía, Erao tudo memórias de alegría.

D'outras béllas senhôras, e princêzas,
Os dezejádos talamos engêita,
Que tudo em fim, tu puro amor desprézas,
Quando húm gesto, suáve te sugéita:
Vêndo estas namorádas estranhêzas,
O velho pay sesúdo, que respeita,
O murmurár do povo e a fantasía,
Do filho, que casárse nao quería.

Tirár Inez ao mundo determína,
Por lhe tirar o filho, que tem prêso,
Crêndo co'sangue só da morte indina,
Matár do firme amôr o fogo acêso:
Que furôr consentío, que a espáda fina,
Que pôde sustentár o grande peso

Do furor Mauro, fôsse levantáda, Contra huma fraca dama delicada?

Trazíao-na os horríferos algôzes
Ante o Rey, ja movído a piedáde,
Mas o pôvo com falsas, e ferózes
Razôens, á morte crua o persuáde.
Ella com tristes e piedósas vózes,
Sahidas só de mágoa e saudáde
Do seu Príncipe e filhos que deixáva,
Que mais que a propria mórte a magoáva.

Para o céo cristalíno levantândo,
Com lágrimas os olhos piedósos,
Os olhos, porque as maos lhe estáva atândo
Hum dos duros minístros rigorôsos:
E depois nos menínos atentândo,
Que tao queridos tínha, e tao mimósos,
Cuja orfandáde como mai temía,
Para o avô cruel assim dizía.

Se já nas brutas feras, cuja mente
Natúra fez cruel de nascimênto;
E nas áves agréstes, que somênte
Nas rapínas aérias tem o intênto,
Com pequênas criânças vio a gente,
Têrem tao piedôso sentimênto,
Como coa mãy de Nino ja mostrárao,
E cos Irmãos, que Roma edificárao:

O'tu que tens de humâno o gesto, e o peito, Se de humâno he matár huma donzélla Fraca, e sem força só por têr sugéito O coração, a quem sôube vencêlla, A éstas criancínhas tem respêito Pois o não tens á morte escura délla, Môvate a piedáde sua, e minha, Pois te não move a culpa, que não tínha.

E se vencêndo a Maura resistência, A morte sabes dar com fogo e ferro, Sabe tambem dar vida com clemência, A quem para perdêlla nao fêz erro. Mas se te assi meréce esta innocência, Pôc-me perpétuo e mísero destêrro, Na Scythia fria, ou lá na Libia ardênte, Onde em lágrimas viva eternamênte.

Pôe-me onde se use toda a feridáde, Entre leôens, e tigres; e veréi Se nelles achar posso a piedáde, Que entre peitos humânos nao achéi; Alli co' amor intrínseco, e vontáde, Naquêlle por quem morro, criaréi Estas relíquias suas, que aqui víste, Que refrigério séjao da mai triste.

Quería perdoár-lhe o rey beníno,
Movído das palavras, que o magôao,
Mas o pertinaz pôvo, e seu destino,
(Que desta sorte o quiz) lhe nao perdoao
Arrancao das espadas de aco fino,
Os que por bom tal feito alli pregôao:
Contra huma dama, o peitos carniceíros,
Ferózes vos mostráes, e cavalleiros?

Qual contra a linda moça Policena, Consolação extrêma da may velha, Porque a sômbra de Achiles a condêna, C' o ferro o duro Pirro se aparêlha: Mas élla os olhos, com que o ar serêna (Bem cômo paciênte, e mansa ovélha) Na mísera may postos, que endoudéce, Ao duro sacrifício se offerèce:

Taes contra Inez os brutos matadôres, No colo de alabástro, que sostinha As óbras, co que amôr matôu de amôres A'quelle, que depôis a fêz raínha: As espádas banhándo, e as brâncas flôres, Que ella dos olhos seus regádas tínha, Se incarniçávao férvidos, e irósos, No futúro castígo nao cuidósos.

Bem pudéras, ó sol, da vista dêstes,
Teus ráyos apartár aquêlle dia,
Cômo da séva mesa de Thyestes
Quando os filhos por mao de Atrêu comía:
Vós ó concavos valles que pudéstes,
A voz extrêma ouvír da boca fría,
O nome do seu Pedro, que lhe ouvístes,
Por muito grande espáço repetístes.

Assi como a bonína, que cortáda
Antes de tempo fôi, cândida e bélla,
Sêndo das mãos lascívas mal tratáda,
Da menína, que a trôuxe na capélla,
O cheiro traz perdído, e a côr murcháda,
Tal está morta a pállida donzélla,
Sêcas do rosto as rósas, e perdída
A brânca, e viva cor, co' a doce vida.

As filhas do Mondêgo a morte escúra,
Longo tempo chorândo memorárao,
E por memória etérna em fonte pura,
As lágrimas chorádas transformárao,
O nome lhe puzérao, que inda dura,
Dos amôres de Inez, que alli passárao;
Vêde, que fresca fonte rega as flores,
Que lágrimas sao ágoa, e o nôme amôres.

From the fifth Canto of the same.

Porem já cincos sóes érao passádos,
Que dalli nos partíramos, cortândo
Os máres nunca de ôutrem navegádos,
Prosperamênte os ventos assoprândo;
Quândo huma noite estando descuidádos,
Na cortadôra proa vigiândo,

Huma nuvem que os ares escuréce, Sobre nossas cabêças apparéce.

Tam temerósa vinha, e carregâda,
Que pôz nos coraçõens hum grânde medo,
Bramíndo o nêgro már de lônge bráda,
Como se désse em vao n'algum rochêdo:
O' potestáde, dísse, sublimáda,
Que ameaço divíno, ou que segrêdo,
Este clima, e este már nos apresênta,
Que mór cousa paréce, que tormênta?

Nao acabáva, quândo huma figúra,
Se nos móstra no ár, robústa, e válida,
De disfórme, e grandíssima estatúra,
O rôsto carregádo, a barba esquállida:
Os olhos, encovádos, e a postúra
Medônha, e má, e a côr terrêna, e pállida,
O bôca nêgra, os dentes amaréllos.

Tam grânde éra de mêmbros, que bem pósso
Certificárte, que este era o segúndo,
De Rhódes estranhíssimo Colôsso,
Que hum dos sete milágres foi do mundo:
Co' hum tom de vóz nos falla horrêndo e grôsso,
Que parecêo sahír do mar profúndo,
Arrepiãose as cárnes, e o cabêllo,
A mi, e a todos, só de ouvílo, e vêlo.

E disse, o'gente ousada mais que quantas
No mundo cometterao grandes cousas;
Tu, que por guerras cruas, taes, e tantas,
E por trabalhos vãos nunca repousas,
Pois vedados términos quebrantas,
E navegar meus longos mares ousas,
Que eu tanto tempo há que guardo, e tenho
Nunca arados de estranho ou proprio lenho;

Pois vens vêr os segrêdos escondidos
Da naturêza, e do humido elemento,
A nenhum grânde humâno concedidos
De nóbre ou de immortal merecimento:

Ouve os damnos de mi, que apercebidos Estao a teu sobêjo atrevimento, Por tôdo o largo már, e pela terra, Que inda hás-de subjugár com dura guérra.

Sábe que quantas náos esta viágem,
Que tu fazes, fizérem de atrevidas,
Inimiga teráo esta parágem
Com ventos, e tormêntas desmedidas.
E da primeira armada, que passagem
Fizér por éstas ondas insoffridas,
Eu farei de improviso tal castigo,
Que sêja mór o damno que o perigo.

Aqui espéro tomar, se não me engâno,
De quem me descubrio alta vingânça;
E não se acabará só nisto o damno
De vossa pertinace confiança;
Antes em vossas nãos vereis cada ânno
(Se hé verdade o que meu juizo alcança)
Naufrágios, perdições de toda sorte,
Que o menór mal de tódos seja a morte.

E do primeiro illustre que a ventura Com fâma alta fizer tocár os Céos, Serei eterna e nóva sepultura, Por juizos incógnitos de Dêos: Aqui porá da Turca armada dura Os sobêrbos e prosperos trophéos Comigo de seus damnos o ameaça A destruida Quilôa, com Mombaça.

Outro tambem virá de honráda fama, Liberal, Cavalleiro, e namorado, E comsigo trará a formósa Dama, Que Amôr por gram mercê lhe terá dado: Triste ventura e nêgro fado os châma Neste terrêno meu, que duro, e irádo, Os deixará de hum crú naufragio vivos, Para verem trabálhos excessivos.

Verão morrêr com fóme os filhos charos, Em tanto amôr gerados, e nascidos: Verão os Cáfres asperos, e aváros, Tirár á linda Dama os seus vestidos: Os crystallínos membros, e preclaros, A' calma, ao frio, ao ár verão despídos; Despois de ter pizado longamênte Co' os delicados pés a arêa ardente.

E verão mais os ólhos que escapárem
De tanto mal, de tanta desventura,
Os dous amântes miseros ficárem
Na férvida e implacabil espessura.
Alli, despois que as pedras abrandarem
Com lágrimas de dôr, de mágoa pura,
Abraçados, as almas soltarao
Da formósa e misérrima prisao.

Mais hia por diante o monstro horrêndo
Dizendo nóssos fados, quando alçádo
Lhe dice eu: quem és tu que esse estupendo
Côrpo, certo me tem maravilhado?
A bôca, e os ólhos nêgros retorcêndo,
E dândo hum espantôso e grânde brádo,
Me respondêo com vos pesáda e amára,
Como quem da pergunta lhe pezára:

Eu sou aquelle occulto e grande Cábo
A quem chamáis vós outros Tormentório;
Que nunca a Ptolemêo, Pompónio, Estrábo,
Plinio, e quantos passárao fui notório.
Aqui toda a Africâna cósta acábo
Neste meu nunca visto Promontório,
Que para o Pólo Antárctico se estend
A quem vóssa ousadía tânto offênde.

Fui dos filhos aspérrimos da Térra,
Qual Encélado, Egêo, e o Centimâno;
Chameime Adamastôr, e fui na guérra
Contra o que vibra os ráios de Vulcâno:
Não que puzésse sérra sôbre sérra,
Mas conquistando as ôndas do Occeâno
Fui Capitão do mar, por onde andáva
A armáda de Neptuno, que eu buscáva.

Amôres da alta Espôsa de Pelêo
Me fizéram tomár tamànha emprêza,
Todas as Dêosas desprezêi do Céo,
Só por amár das águas a Princeza:
Hum dia a vi, co' as filhas de Nerêo,
Sahir núa na práia; e logo prêza
A vontáde senti, de tall manêira
Que inda nao sinto cousa que mais queira.

Cômo fôsse impossivel alcançálla
Pela grandêza fêa de meu gésto,
Determinei por armas de tomálla,
E a Dóris este cáso manifésto:
De mêdo a Dêosa entao por mi lhe falla;
Mas élla co' hum formôso riso honésto
Respondêo: Qual será o amôr bastânte
De Nympha que sustente o de hum Gigânte?

Com tudo, por livrarmos o Oceâno:
De tanta guerra, eu buscarei maneira,
Com que com minha hônra escuse o dâmno:
Tal resposta me torna a mensageira.
Eu que cahir nao púde neste engâno
(Que hé grande dos amântes a ceguêira)
Enchêram-me com grândes abondânças
O peito de dezêjos, e esperânças.

Já nescio, já da guérra desistindo, Huma noite de Dóris promettída, Me apparéce de longe o gésto lindo, Da brânca Thétis, unica despida: Cômo doudo corrí, ne lônge abríndo Os bráços, para aquélla que éra vida Deste côrpo; e começo os ólhos bellos A lhe beijar, as fáces, e os cabêllos.

Oh que não sei de nôjo cômo o cônte!

Que crêndo ter nos bráços quem amáva,
Abraçádo me achei co' hum duro mônte
De áspero mato, e de espessura bráva:
Estândo co' hum penêdo frônte afrônte,
Que eu pêlo rôsto angélico apertáva,
Não fiquei hómem não, mas mudo, e quêdo,
E junto de hum penêdo outro penêdo.

O' Nympha a mais formósa do Oceâno:
Já que minha presênça nao te agráda,
Que te custáva ter-me neste engâno,
Ou fôsse mônte, núvem, sônho, ou náda?
De aqui me párto irádo, e quási insâno,
Da mágoa, e da deshônra alli passáda,
A buscár ôutro múndo, ônde nao vísse
Quêm de meu prânto, e de meu mál se risse.

Erao já nêste têmpo meus irmãos
Vencidos, e em miséria extrêma póstos;
E, por mais segurár-se os Dêoses vaos,
Aguns a vários môntes sotopóstos:
E cômo contra o Céo nao válem maos,
Eu que chorândo andáva meus desgôstos
Comecei a sentir do fádo imígo,
Por meus atrevimêntos, o castígo.

Convérte-se-me a cárne em térra dura, Em penêdos os óssos se fizéram: Estes mêmbros que vês, e ésta figura, Por éstas lôngas águas se estendêram: Emfim minha grandissima estatúra Neste remoto cábo convertêram Os Dêoses; e por mais dobrádas mágoas, Me anda Thetis cercando destas ágoas. Assim contáva, e co' hum medônho chôro,
Subito dante os ólhos se apartôu;
Desfêz-se a nuvem negra, e co' hum sonóro
Bramído muito lônge o már soôu.
Eu, levantândo as maos ao sancto côro
Dos Anjos, que tao lônge nos guiôu,
A Dêos pedi, que removêsse os dúros
Cásos que Adamastôr, contou futúros.

From the second Canto of the same.

Ouvio-lhe éstas palávras piedósas
A formósa Dióne, e commovída,
De êntre as Nymphas se vái, que saudósas
Ficárao désta subita partída.
Já penétra as estrêllas luminósas;
Já na tercêira Esféra recebída
Avânte pássa; e lá no sexto Céo
Para ônde estáva o Padre se movêo.

E cômo hia affrontáda do camínho,
Tao formósa no gésto se mostráva,
Que as estrêllas, o Céo, e o ar vizínho
E tudo quânto a vía namoráva.
Dos ólhos ônde faz seu filho o nínho
Huns espíritos vivos inspiráva,
Com que os Pólos geládos accendía,
E tornáva de fôgo a Esféra fria.

E por máis namorár o Soberâno
Pádre, de quem foi sêmpre amáda, e chára,
Se lhe apresênta assi cômo ao Troiâno
Na sélva Idea já se apresentára.
Se a víra o caçadôr, que o vulto humâno
Perdêo, vêndo a Diana na água clára,
Nunca os famíntos gálgos o matáram;
Que primeiro desêjos o acabáram.

Os crêspos fios de ôuro se esprazíam
Pêlo cólo, que a néve escurecía:
Andândo, as lâcteas têtas lhe tremíam
Com quem Amôr brincáva, e nao se vía:
Da álva pretína châmas lhe sahíam,
Onde o meníno as álmas accendía:
Pêlas lisas colúmnas lhe trepávam.
Desêjos, que cômo héra se enrolávam.

Co' hum delgádo cendál as pártes cóbre,
De quêm vergônha hé naturál repáro:
Porêm nem tudo escônde, nem descóbre
O véo dos rôxos lirios pòuco aváro:
Mas para que o desêjo accênda, e dóbre,
Lhe põe diânte aquelle objecto ráro.
Já se sêntem no Céo, por tôda a párte,
Ciúmes em Vulcâno, amôr em Márte.

E mostrândo no angélico semblânte
Co' o riso húma tristêza misturáda;
Como dâma que foi do incâuto amânte
Em brincos amorôsos mál tratáda;
Que se queixa, e se ri n' hum mêsmo instânte,
E se móstra êntre alégre magoáda;
Desta árte a Dêosa, a quem nenhúma iguála,
Mais mimósa que triste a o Pádre fála.

From the first Idyl of Boccage.

A'roz do Téjo, em brônca penedía, Mináda pêlas ôndas salitrósas, Prisionêiro de amôr Tritao gemía.

Luzíao lhe as espádoas escamosas, Sustentáva o marítimo instrumênto, O búzio atroadôr nas maos callósas: Cônchas da côr do lîquido Elemênto Párte do côrpo enôrme lhe vestíao, Iguâl na ligeirêza ao próprio vênto:

Da bárba sálsas gôtas lhe cahíaő, E nos ólhos, que Amôr affogueáva, Em borbotões as lágrimas fervíaő

Lília que hum Bósque próximo habitáva, Lília a Napéa, desdenhósa, e bélla, Amorósos clamôres lhe arrancáva:

Hum dia a vio na práia, e só de vêlla Seu coração feróz enfeiticado, Voôu, gemêndo, para os ólhos délla.

Das entrânhas do Pélago salgádo, Lòuco de Amôres, lôuco de suadádes. O queixôso Amadôr tinha saltádo:

Do Pai, que abáfa as nêgras tempestádes, Já, seu voráz tormênto éra sabído, E das outras Equóreas Divindádes.

De aéreas esperânças illudído, Grao têmpo seu espírito saudôso, Rastejândo a cruél, vagôu perdído;

Grao têmpo glórias vaas sonhôu teimôso, Antes que désse fructuósa entráda A o ácre desengâno, o pêito ancióso.

&c.

FIM.

LBJa'23 LBFe '06







Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process. Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

## PreservationTechnologies A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive Cranberry Township, PA 16066 (724) 779-2111



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS

00055683777